THE ADVENTURES OF PEREGRINE PICKLE.

IN WHICH ARE INCLUDED,

MEMOIRS OF A LADY OF QUALITY.

BY DR. SMOLLETT.

IN FOUR VOLUMES.

Cooke's Edition.

EMBELLISHED WITH SUPERB ENGRAVINGS.

VOL. IV.

Respicere exemplar vitæ morumque jubebo
Doctum imitatorem, et veras hinc ducere voces. Hor.

London:
Printed for C. COOKE, No 17, Paternoster-Row
And sold by all the Booksellers in
Town and Country.

1216

TANJORE MAHARAJA SERFOJI'S SARASWATI MAHAL
1216

THE ADVENTURES OF PEREGRINE PICKLE.

CHAP. I.

Peregrine receives a letter from Hatchway, in Consequence of which he repairs to the Garrison, and performs the last Office to his Aunt. He is visited by Mr. Gauntlet, who invites him to his Marriage.

IN this circle of amusements our hero's time was parcelled out, and few young gentlemen of the age enjoyed life with greater relish, notwithstanding those intervening checks of Reason, which served only to whet his appetite for a repetition of the pleasures she so prudently condemned; when he received the following letter, by which he was determined to visit his estate in the country.

'COUSIN PICKLE,

'I HOPE you are in a better trim than your 'aunt, who has been fast moored to her bed these seven 'weeks by several feet of under-water logging in her 'hold and hollop, whereby I doubt her planks are rotted, so as she cannot chuse but fall to pieces in a short 'time. I have done all in my power to keep her tight 'and easy, and free from sudden squalls that might 'overstrain her. And here have been the doctors, who 'have skuttled her lower deck, and let out six gallons 'of water. For my own part, I wonder how the devil it came there; for you know as how it was a liquor she never took in. But as for those fellows the doctors,

'doctors, they are like unskilful carpenters, that in 'mending one leak make a couple; and so she fills 'again apace. But the worst sign of all is this here, 'she won't let a drop of Nantz go betwixt the con... 'ings of her teeth, and has quite lost the rudder of her 'understanding, whereby she yaws woundily in her 'speech, palavering about some foreign p...t called the 'New Geereusalem, and wishing herself in a safe birth 'in the river Geordun. The parson, I must say, 'strives to keep her steady concerning the navigation of 'her soul, and talks very sensibly of charity and the 'poor, whereof she hath left a legacy of two hundred 'pounds in her will. And here has been Mr. Gama-'liel, and your brother, my lord, demanding entrance 'at the gate, in order to see her; but I would not suf-'fer them to come aboard, and pointed my patereroes, 'which made them sheer off. Your sister, Mrs. Clo-'ver, keeps close watch upon her kinswoman, with-'out ever turning in; and a kind-hearted young woman 'it is. I should be glad to see you at the garrison, if 'the wind of your inclination sits that way; and may-'hap it may be a comfort to your aunt, to behold you 'along-side of her, when her anchor is apeak. So no 'more at present, but rests your friend and humble ser-'vant to command, 'JOHN HATCHWAY.'

Next morning, after the receipt of this epistle, Peregrine, in order to manifest his regard to his aunt, as well as his friendship for honest Jack, set out on horseback for their habitation, attended by Pipes, who longed to see his old messmate; but before he reached the garrison, Mrs. Hatchway had given up the ghost, in the threescore and fifth year of her age. The widower seemed to bear his loss with resignation, and behaved very decently upon the occasion, though he did not undergo those dangerous transports of sorrow which some tender hearted husbands have felt at the departure of their wives. The lieutenant was naturally a philosopher, and so well disposed to acquiesce in the dispensations of Providence, that in this, as well as in e...

other emergency of his life, he firmly believed, that every thing which happened was for the best.

Peregrine's task, therefore, was not so great in comforting him, as in consoling his own sister, who with great poignancy and sincerity of grief lamented the death of the only relation with whom she had maintained any intimacy of correspondence; for her mother was as implacable as ever in her enmity against her and Peregrine, and rather more determined in her rancour, that which was originally a sudden transport of indignation being by this time settled into a confirmed inveteracy of hate. As for Gam, who was now dignified by the country people with the appellation of the young squire, he still acted in the capacity of minister to the caprice and vengeance of his mother, taking all opportunities of disturbing Julia's peace, slandering her reputation, and committing outrages against the tenants and domesticks of her husband, who was a man of a quiet and timorous disposition.

But the chief amusement of young Pickle, in his later years, was the chace, in which he acquired some renown by his intrepidity and remarkable figure, which improved every day in deformity; insomuch, as to suggest a ludicrous scheme of revenge to a gentleman in the nighbourhood. Having been affronted by the insolence of Crookback, he clothed a large baboon that was in his possession in a dress that resembled the hunting equipage of Gam, and ordering the animal to be set astride, and tied upon the back of his keenest hunter, turned them out one day after the hounds. The horse in a little time out-stripping all the rest in the field, the rider was mistaken for Gam by the whole company, who saluted him as he passed with an halloo, observing that the squire had his usual good luck, in being better mounted than his neighbours. Pickle afterwards appearing in his own person, created great astonishment in the spectators, one of whom asked if he had split himself in twain, and pointed out his representative, who was by this time almost up with the

hounds: upon which, the identical Gam went in pursuit of the impostor. When he overtook him, he was so much enraged at the counterfeit, that he attacked the baboon whip in hand, and in all probability would have sacrificed him to his resentment, had he not been prevented by the other fox-hunters. They interposed, in order to make up the difference betwixt two brothers of the sport, and were equally surprized and diverted, when they distinguished the quality of Crookback's antagonist, which they rescued from his rage, and re-conveyed to it's master.'

Peregrine at the request of his friend Jack, took charge of his aunt's funeral, to which his parents were invited, though they did not think proper to appear, or pay the least regard to his solicitations, when he desired permission to wait upon them in person. Nevertheless, old Gamaliel, at the instigation of his wife, afterwards obtained an order from Doctor's Commons, obliging Hatchway to produce the will of his wife, on the supposition that she had bequeathed to him some part of the money which (he knew) was at her own disposal. But from this step he reaped no other satisfaction than that of finding himself altogether neglected by the testatrix, who had left all her effects to her husband, except one thousand pounds, with her jewels, to Julia's daughter, the benefaction mentioned in the lieutenant's letter, and some inconsiderable legacies to her favourite domesticks.

A few days after the interment of this good lady, our hero was agreeably surprized with a visit from his friend Godfrey, who had come to England in consequence of that promotion which he owed to his interest, though the soldier himself placed it to the credit of a certain courtier who had formerly promised to befriend him, and now finding his advancement unowned very modestly arrogated the merit of it to himself. He communicated his good fortune to Pickle, who complimented him upon it as an event of which he had no precognition; and at the same time told him, that

in

in consequence of his preferment, his cousin at Windsor had consented to his being immediately united in the bands of wedlock with his lovely Sophy; that the wedding-day was already fixed; and that nothing would be wanting to his happiness, if Peregrine would honour the nuptials with his presence.

Our hero accepted the invitation with great eagerness, when he learned that Emilia would be there in quality of bride's maid; and now repeated what he had formerly written to his friend, namely, that he was not only willing, but extremely impatient, to atone for his mad behaviour to that young lady, by laying himself and his whole fortune at her feet. Godfrey thanked him for his honourable intention, and promised to use his influence, and that of Sophy, in his behalf, though he seemed dubious of their success, on account of his sister's delicacy, which could not pardon the least shadow of disrespect. He owned, indeed, he was not certain that she would appear in the same company with Pickle; but as she had made no stipulation on the score, he would interpret her silence in the most favourable manner, and keep her in ignorance of his design, until she should find it too late to retract with any decency. The hope of seeing and conversing with Emilia, and perhaps of being reconciled to her, after having suffered so much and so long from her displeasure, raised a tumult of ideas in his breast, and produced a strange inquietude of joy and perturbation. Gauntlet having staid with him a few days, and signified the time appointed for his espousals, took his leave, in order to prepare for the occasion; while Peregrine, with his friend Hatchway, made a tour among his acquaintance in the country, with a view of sounding their inclinations touching a project which he had lately conceived, of offering himself as a candidate for a certain borough in the neighbourhood, at the ensuing election for members of parliament.

This scheme, which was suggested to him by one of

his quality patrons, would have ſucceeded according to his wiſh, had the election taken place immediately; but before that happened, his intereſt was overbalanced by ſome ſmall accidents that will be recorded in the ſequel. In the mean time he repaired to Windſor, on the eve of his friend's marriage, and underſtood from Godfrey that it was with the utmoſt difficulty he and Sophy could prevail upon his ſiſter to be preſent at the wedding, when ſhe was informed that her lover was invited; and that her conſent had not been obtained, until they had promiſed, on the part of Peregrine, that he ſhould not renew the old topick, nor even ſpeak to her in the ſtyle of a former acquaintance.

Our young gentleman was nettled at this preliminary, to which, however, he ſaid he would adhere; and ſo well did he think himſelf fortified with pride and reſentment, that he reſolved to behave towards her with ſuch indifference, as would, he hoped, mortify her vanity, and thereby puniſh her for the implacability of her diſpoſition. Armed with theſe ſentiments, he was next day introduced by Godfrey to the bride, who received him with her uſual ſweetneſs of temper and affability; and Emilia being preſent, he ſaluted her with a diſtant bow, which ſhe acknowledged with a cold courteſy, and an aſpect of ice. Though this deportment confirmed his diſpleaſure, her beauty undermined his reſolution; he thought her charms were infinitely improved ſince their laſt parting; and a thouſand fond images recurring to his imagination, he felt his whole ſoul diſſolving into tenderneſs and love.

In order to baniſh thoſe dangerous ideas, he endeavoured to enter into a gay converſation with Sophy, on the ſubject of the approaching ceremony; but his tongue performed it's office aukwardly; his eyes were attracted towards Emilia, as if they had been ſubject to the power of faſcination; in ſpite of all his efforts, a deep ſigh eſcaped from his boſom; and his whole appearance indicated anxiety and confuſion.

The bridegroom perceiving his condition, abridged the

the viſit, and having conducted his companion to his own lodgings, expreſſed his concern at having been the innocent occaſion of his uneaſineſs, by expoſing him to the ſight of Emilia, which he perceived had given him pain. Peregrine, who had by this time recollected the dictates of his pride, aſſured him, that he was very much miſtaken in the cauſe of his diſorder, which was no other than a ſudden qualm, to which he had been for ſome time ſubject: and to ſhew him how philoſophically he could bear the diſdain of Emilia, which, with a deference to her conduct, he could not help thinking a little too ſevere, he deſired, as the bridegroom had made preparation for a private ball in the evening, that he would provide him with an agreeable partner; in which caſe he would exhibit undoubted proofs of the tranquillity of his heart. 'I was in hopes,' anſwered Godfrey, 'of being able, with the aſſiſtance of Sophy, to make up matters between you and my ſiſter, and for that reaſon kept her unengaged to any other gentleman for the night; but ſince ſhe was ſo peeviſhly obſtinate, I ſhall take care to accommodate you with a very handſome young lady, whoſe partner will not be ſorry to exchange her for Emilia.'

The thoughts of having an opportunity to coquet with another woman, under the eye of his implacable miſtreſs, ſupported his ſpirits during the ceremony, which put Gauntlet in poſſeſſion of his heart's deſire; and, by means of this cordial, he found himſelf ſo undiſturbed at dinner, though he ſat oppoſit to his fair enemy, that he was able to paſs ſome occaſional jokes upon the new-married couple, with ſome appearance of mirth and good-humour. Nor did Emily any otherwiſe ſeem affected by his preſence, than by excepting him from the participation of thoſe genial regards which ſhe diſtributed to the reſt of the company. This eaſineſs of behaviour on her ſide, reinforced his reſolution, by giving him pretence to call her ſenſibility in queſtion; for he could not conceive how any woman of acute feelings could ſit unmoved, in preſence of a man with

whom ſhe had ſuch recent and intimate connections; not conſidering that ſhe had much more reaſon to condemn his affectation of unconcern, and that her external deportment might, like his own, be an effort of pride and reſentment.

This conteſt, in point of diſſimulation, continued till night, when the company was paired for dancing, and Peregrine began the ball by walking a minuet with the bride; then he took out the young lady to whom he was recommended by Gauntlet, being very well pleaſed to ſee that her perſon was ſuch as might have inſpired even Emily herſelf with jealouſy, though, at the ſame time, he perceived his miſtreſs coupled with a gay young officer, whom (with all due deference to his own qualifications) he conſidered as no deſpicable rival. However, he himſelf firſt began hoſtilities, by becoming all of a ſudden particular with his partner, whom he forthwith aſſailed with flattering compliments, that ſoon introduced the ſubject of love, upon which he expatiated with great art and elocution, uſing not only the faculty of ſpeech, but alſo the language of the eyes, in which he was a perfect connoiſſeur.

This behaviour ſoon manifeſted itſelf to the whole aſſembly, the greateſt part of whom believed that he was in good earneſt captivated by the charms of his partner, while Emilia penetrating into his deſign, turned his own artillery upon himſelf, by ſeeming to liſten with pleaſure to the addreſſes of his rival, who was no novice in the art of making love: ſhe even affected uncommon vivacity, and giggled aloud at every whiſper which he conveyed into her ear, inſomuch that ſhe, in her turn, afforded ſpeculation to the company, who imagined the young ſoldier had made a conqueſt of the bridegroom's ſiſter.

Pickle himſelf began to cheriſh the ſame opinion, which gradually invaded his good humour, and at length filled his boſom with rage. He ſtrove to ſuppreſs his indignation, and called every conſideration of vanity and revenge to his aid: he endeavoured to wean his

his eyes from the fatal object that disturbed him, but they would not obey his direction and command; he wished himself deprived of all sensation, when he heard her laugh and saw her smile upon the officer; and in the course of country dancing, when he was obliged to join hands with her, the touch thrilled through all his nerves, and kindled a flame within him which he could not contain. In a word, his endeavours to conceal the situation of his thoughts were so violent, that his constitution could not endure the shock; the sweat ran down his forehead in a stream, the colour vanished from his cheeks, his knees began to totter, and his eye-sight to fail; so that he must have fallen at his full length upon the floor, had not he retired very abruptly into another room, where he threw himself upon a couch and fainted.

In this condition he was found by his friend, who seeing him withdraw with such symptoms of disorder, followed him thither; and when he recovered the use of his faculties, pressed him to make use of a bed in that house, rather than expose himself in the night air, by going home to his own lodgings; but not being able to prevail upon him to accept the offer, he wrapped him up in a cloak, and conducting him to the inn where he lodged, helped him to undress and go to bed, where he was immediately seized with a violent fit of the ague. Godfrey behaved with great tenderness, and would have actually bore him company all night, notwithstanding the circumstances of his own situation, had not his friend insisted upon his returning to the company, and making his apology to his partner for his sudden departure.

This was a step absolutely necessary towards maintaining the quiet of the assembly, which he found in great consternation, occasioned by his absence; for some of the ladies seeing the bridegroom follow the stranger in his retreat, the meaning of which they did not comprehend, began to be afraid of a quarrel. Emilia, upon pretence of that supposition, was so much alarmed,

alarmed, that ſhe could not ſtand, and was fain to have recourſe to a ſmelling-bottle.

The bride, who underſtood the whole myſtery, was the only perſon that acted with deliberation and compoſure; ſhe imputed Emilia's diſorder to the right cauſe, which was no other than concern for the condition of her lover, and aſſured the ladies there was nothing extraordinary in Mr. Pickle's going off, he being ſubject to fainting fits, by which he was often overtaken without any previous notice. The arrival of Gauntlet confirmed the truth of this declaration; he made an apology to the company in the name of his friend, who, he told them, was ſuddenly taken ill, and they returned to their diverſion of dancing: with this variation; Emilia was ſo diſordered and fatigued, that ſhe begged to be excuſed from continuing the exerciſe; and Peregrine's partner being diſengaged, was paired with the young officer, for whom ſhe was originally deſigned.

Meanwhile, the bride withdrew into another apartment, with her ſiſter, and expoſtulated with her upon her cruelty to Mr. Pickle; aſſuring her, from Godfrey's information, that he had undergone a ſevere fit on her account, which, in all likelihood, would have a dangerous effect upon his conſtitution. Though Emily was inflexible in her anſwers to the kind remonſtrances of the gentle Sophy, her heart was melting with the impreſſions of pity and love; and finding herſelf unable to perform the duty of her function, in putting the bride to bed, ſhe retired to her own chamber, and, in ſecret, ſympathized with the diſtemper of her lover.

In the morning, as early as decency would permit him to leave the arms of his dear wife, Captain Gauntlet made a viſit to Peregrine, who had paſſed a very tedious and uneaſy night, having been ſubject to ſhort intervals of delirium, during which Pipes had found it very difficult to keep him faſt belayed. He owned indeed to Godfrey, that his imagination had been haunted by the ideas of Emilia and her officer, which tormented him

him to an unſpeakable degree of anguiſh and diſtraction; and that he would rather ſuffer death than a repetition of ſuch excruciating reflections. He was, however, comforted by his friend; who aſſured him, that his ſiſter's inclinations would in time prevail over all the endeavours of reſentment and pride, illuſtrating this aſſeveration by an account of the manner in which ſhe was affected by the knowledge of his diſorder, and adviſing him to implore the mediation of Sophy, in a letter which ſhe ſhould communicate to Emilia.

This was an opportunity that our hero thought too favourable to be neglected; calling for paper, he ſat up in his bed, and in the firſt tranſports of his emotion, wrote the following petition to Godfrey's amiable wife.

'DEAR MADAM,

'THE affliction of a contrite heart can never 'appeal to your benevolence in vain, and therefore I 'preſume to approach you, in this ſeaſon of delight, 'with the language of ſorrow, requeſting that you will 'eſpouſe the cauſe of an unhappy lover, who mourns 'with unutterable anguiſh over his ruined hope, and 'intercede for my pardon with that divine creature, 'whom, in the intemperance and exceſs of paſſion, I 'have ſo mortally offended. Good Heaven! is my 'guilt inexpiable? Am I excluded from all hope of 'remiſſion? Am I devoted to miſery and deſpair? I 'have offered all the atonement which the moſt perfect 'and ſincere penitence could ſuggeſt, and ſhe rejects 'my humility and repentance. If her reſentment 'would purſue me to the grave, let her ſignify her plea'ſure; and may I be branded with the name of villain, 'and remembered with infamy and deteſtation to all 'poſterity, if I heſitate one moment in ſacrificing a life 'which is odious to Emilia. Ah! Madam, while I 'thus pour forth the effuſions of my grief and diſtrac'tion, I look around the apartment in which I lie, and 'every well known object that ſalutes my view, recals 'to my remembrance that fond, that happy day, on

'which the fair, the good, the tender-hearted Sophy 'became my advocate, though I was a ſtranger to her 'acquaintance, and effected a tranſporting reconcilia-'tion between me and that ſame enchanting beauty, 'that is now ſo implacably incenſed. If ſhe is not ſa-'tisfied with the pangs of remorſe and diſappointment, 'the tranſports of madneſs I have undergone, let her 'preſcribe what farther penance ſhe thinks I ought to 'endure: and when I decline her ſentence, let me be 'the object of her eternal diſdain.'

'I commit myſelf, dear Madam! dear Sophy! dear 'partner of my friend! to your kind interpoſition. I 'know you will manage my cauſe, as a concern on 'which my happineſs entirely depends: and I hope 'every thing from your compaſſion and beneficence, 'while I fear every thing from her rigour and barba-'rity. Yes! I call it barbarity; a ſavageneſs of de-'licacy, altogether inconſiſtent with the tenderneſs of 'human nature: and may the moſt abject contempt be 'my portion, if I live under its ſcourge!—But I begin 'to rave. I conjure you by your own humanity and 'ſweetneſs of diſpoſition, I conjure you by your love 'for the man whom Heaven hath decreed your pro-'tector, to employ your influence with that angel of 'wrath, in behalf of your obliged and obedient ſer-'vant, 'P. PICKLE.'

This epiſtle was immediately tranſmitted by Godfrey to his wife, who peruſed it with marks of the moſt humane ſympathy; and carrying it into her ſiſter's chamber—'Here is ſomething,' ſaid ſhe, preſenting the paper, which I muſt recommend to your ſerious attention.' Emilia, who immediately gueſſed the meaning of this addreſs, abſolutely refuſed to look upon it, or even to hear it read, till her brother entering her apartment, reprimanded her ſharply for her obſtinacy and pride, accuſed her of folly and diſſimulation, and entered ſo warmly into the intereſts of his friend, that ſhe thought him unkind in his remonſtrances, and burſting into a flood of tears reproached him with partiality

tiality and want of attention. Godfrey, who entertained the moſt perfect love and veneration for his ſiſter, aſked pardon for having given offence, and kiſſing the drops from her fair eyes, begged ſhe would for his ſake liſten to the declaration of his friend.

Thus ſolicited, ſhe could not refuſe to hear the letter; which when he had repeated, ſhe lamented her own fate in being the occaſion of ſo much uneaſineſs; deſiring her brother to aſſure Mr. Pickle that ſhe was not a voluntary enemy to his peace; on the contrary, ſhe wiſhed him all happineſs, though ſhe hoped he would not blame her for conſulting her own, in avoiding any future explanation or connection with a perſon whoſe correſpondence ſhe found herſelf under a neceſſity to renounce.

In vain did the new married couple exhauſt their eloquence in attempting to prove, that the reparation which our hero had offered was adequate to the injury ſhe had ſuſtained; that in reconciling herſelf to a penitent lover, who ſubſcribed to her own terms of ſubmiſſion, her honour would be acquitted by the moſt ſcrupulous and ſevere judges of decorum; and that her inflexibility would be juſtly aſcribed to the pride and inſenſibility of her heart. She turned a deaf ear to all their arguments, exhortations, and entreaties, and threatened to leave the houſe immediately, if they would not promiſe to drop that ſubject of diſcourſe.

Godfrey, very much chagrined at the bad ſucceſs of his endeavours, returned to his friend, and made as favourable a report of the affair as the nature of his converſation with Emilia would permit: but as he could not avoid mentioning her reſolution in the cloſe, Peregrine was obliged to drink again the bitter draught of diſappointment, which put his paſſion into ſuch a ſtate of agitation, as produced a ſhort extaſy of deſpair, in which he acted a thouſand extravagancies. This paroxyſm, however, ſoon ſubſided into a ſettled reſerve of gloomy reſentment, which he in ſecret indulged, detaching

taching himſelf as ſoon as poſſible from the company of the ſoldier, on pretence of retiring to reſt.

While he lay ruminating upon the circumſtances of his preſent ſituation, his friend Pipes, who knew the cauſe of his anxiety, and firmly believed that Emilia loved his maſter in her heart, howſoever ſhe might attempt to diſguiſe her ſentiments; I ſay, Thomas was taken with a conceit which he thought would ſet every thing to rights, and therefore put it into execution without further delay. Laying aſide his hat, he ran directly to the houſe of Sophy's father, and affecting an air of ſurprize and conſternation, to which he had never before been ſubject, thundered at the door with ſuch an alarming knock, as in a moment brought the whole family into the hall. When he was admitted, he began to gape, ſtare, and pant, at the ſame time, and made no reply, when Godfrey aſked what was the matter, till Mrs. Gauntlet expreſſed her apprehenſion about his maſter. When Pickle's name was mentioned, he ſeemed to make an effort to ſpeak, and in a bellowing tone pronounced—'Brought himſelf up, ſplit my topſails!' ſo ſaying, he pointed to his own neck, and roſe upon his tiptoes, by way of explaining the meaning of his words.

Godfrey, without ſtaying to aſk another queſtion, ruſhed out, and flew towards the inn, with the utmoſt horror and concern; while Sophy, who did not rightly underſtand the language of the meſſenger, addreſſing herſelf to him a ſecond time, ſaid with great earneſtneſs, 'I hope no accident has happened to Mr. Pickle—' 'No accident at all,' replied Tom; 'he has only hanged himſelf for love.' Theſe words had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when Emilia, who ſtood liſtening at the parlour door, ſhrieked aloud, and dropped down ſenſeleſs upon the floor; while her ſiſter, who was almoſt equally ſhocked at the intelligence, had recourſe to the aſſiſtance of her maid, by whom ſhe was ſupported from falling.

Pipes hearing Emily's voice, congratulated himſelf upon

upon the succefs of his ftratagem. He fprung to her affiftance, and lifting her up into an eafy-chair, ftood by her until he faw her recover from her fwoon, and heard her call upon his mafter's name with all the frenzy of defpairing love. Then he bent his courfe back to the inn, overjoyed at the opportunity of telling Peregrine what a confeffion he had extorted from his miftrefs, and extremely vain of this proof of his own fagacity.

In the mean time, Godfrey arriving at the houfe in which he fuppofed this fatal cataftrophe had happened, ran up ftairs to Peregrine's chamber, without ftaying to make any enquiry below; and finding the door locked, burft it open with one ftroke of his foot. But what was his amazement, when, upon entrance, our hero ftarting up from the bed, faluted him with a boifterous exclamation of 'Z——ds! who's there?' He was ftruck dumb with aftonifhment, which alfo rivetted him to the place where he ftood, fcarce crediting the teftimony of his own fenfes; till Peregrine, with an air of difcontent, which denoted him difpleafed with his intrufion, difpelled his apprehenfion by a fecond addrefs, faying—'I fee you confider me as a friend, by your ufing me without ceremoney.'

The foldier thus convinced of the falfhood of the information he had received, began to imagine that Pickle had projected the plan which was executed by his fervant; and looking upon it as a piece of unjuftifiable fineffe, which might be attended with very melancholy confequences to his fifter or wife, he anfwered, in a fupercilious tone, that Mr. Pickle muft blame himfelf for the interruption of his repofe, which was intirely owing to the forry jeft he had fet on foot.

Pickle, who was the child of paffion, and more than half mad with impatience before this vifit, hearing himfelf treated in fuch a cavalier manner, advanced up to Godfrey's breaft, and affuming a ftern, or rather frantic countenance—'Hark ye, Sir!' faid he; 'you are miftaken if you think I jeft; I am in downright earneft,

I aſſure you.’ Gauntlet, who was not a man to be brow-beaten, ſeeing himſelf thus bearded by a perſon of whoſe conduct he had, he thought, reaſon to complain, put on his military look of defiance, and erecting his cheſt, replied with an exalted voice—‘ Mr. Pickle, whether you was in jeſt or earneſt, you muſt give me leave to tell you, that the ſcheme was childiſh, unſeaſonable, and unkind, not to give it a harſher term.’—‘ Death, Sir!’ cried our adventurer, ‘ you trifle with my diſquiet: if there is any meaning in your inſinuation, explain yourſelf, and then I ſhall know what anſwer it will befit me to give.’—‘ I came with very different ſentiments,’ reſumed the ſoldier; ‘ but ſince you urge me to expoſtulation, and behave with ſuch unprovoked loftineſs of diſpleaſure, I will, without circumlocution, tax you with having committed an outrage upon the peace of my family, in ſending your fellow to alarm us with ſuch an abrupt account of your having done violence upon yourſelf.’ Peregrine, confounded at this imputation, ſtood ſilent, with a moſt ſavage aſpect of ſurprize, eager to know the circumſtance to which his accuſer alluded, and incenſed to find it beyond the ſphere of his comprehenſion.

While theſe two irritated friends ſtood fronting each other with mutual indignation in their eyes and attitudes, they were joined by Pipes; who, without taking the leaſt notice of the ſituation in which he found them, told his maſter, that he might up with the top-gallant-maſts of his heart, and out with his rejoicing pendants; for as to Miſtreſs Emily, he had clapped her helm a weather, the veſſel wore, and now ſhe was upon the other tack, ſtanding right into the harbour of his good-will.

Peregrine, who was not yet a connoiſſeur in the terms of his lacquey, commanded him, upon pain of his diſpleaſure, to be more explicit in his intelligence; and by dint of divers queſtions, obtained a perfect knowledge of the ſcheme which he had put in execution for his ſervice. This information perplexed him

not

not a little; he would have chaftifed his fervant upon the fpot for his temerity, had he not plainly perceived that the fellow's intention was to promote his eafe and fatisfaction; and on the other hand he knew not how to acquit himfelf of the fufpicion which he faw Godfrey entertained of his being the projector of the plan, without condefcending to an explanation, which his prefent difpofition could not brook. After fome paufe, however, turning to Pipes with a fevere frown—'Rafcal!' faid he, 'this is the fecond time I have fuffered in the opinion of that lady by your ignorance and prefumption; if ever you intermeddle in my affairs for the future, without exprefs order and direction, by all that's facred, I will put you to death without mercy! Away! and let my horfe be faddled this inftant.'

Pipes having withdrawn, in order to perform this piece of duty, our young gentleman addreffing himfelf again to the foldier, and laying his hand upon his breaft, faid, with a folemnity of regard—'Captain Gauntlet, upon my honour, I am altogether innocent of that fhallow device which you impute to my invention; and I don't think you do juftice either to my intellects or honour, in fuppofing me capable of fuch infolent abfurdity. As for your fifter, I have once in my life affronted her in the madnefs and impetuofity of defire; but I have made fuch acknowledgments, and offered fuch atonement, as few women of her fphere would have refufed; and, before God! I am determined to endure every torment of difappointment and defpair, rather than proftrate myfelf again to the cruelty of her unjuftifiable pride.' So faying, he ftalked fuddenly down ftairs, and took horfe immediately; his fpirits being fupported by refentment, which prompted him to vow within himfelf, that he would feek confolation for the difdain of Emilia, in the poffeffion of the firft willing wench he fhould meet upon the road.

While he fet out for the garrifon with thefe fentiments, Gauntlet in a fufpence, between anger, fhame, and concern, returned to the houfe of his father-in-law,

where he found his ſiſter ſtill violently agitated from the news of Peregrine's death, the myſtery of which he forthwith unravelled, recounting at the ſame time the particulars of the converſation which happened at the inn, and deſcribing the demeanour of Pickle with ſome expreſſions of aſperity, which were neither agreeable to Emila, nor approved by the gentle Sophy, who tenderly chid him, for allowing Peregrine to depart in terms of miſunderſtanding.

CHAP. II.

Peregrine ſets out for the Garriſon, and meets with a Nymph on the Road, whom he takes into Keeping, and metamorphoſes into a fine Lady.

IN the mean time, our hero jogged along in a profound reverie, which was diſturbed by a beggar-woman and her daughter, who ſolicited him for alms, as he paſſed them on the road. The girl was about the age of ſixteen, and notwithſtanding the wretched equipage in which ſhe appeared, exhibited to his view a ſet of agreeable features, enlivened with the complexion of health and chearfulneſs. The reſolution I have already mentioned was ſtill warm in his imagination; and he looked upon this young mendicant as a very proper object for the performance of his vow. He therefore entered into a conference with the mother, and for a ſmall ſum of money purchaſed her property in the wench, who did not require much courtſhip and entreaty, before ſhe conſented to accompany him to any place that he ſhould appoint for her habitation.

This contract being ſettled to his ſatisfaction, he ordered Pipes to ſeat his acquiſition behind him upon the crupper, and alighting at the firſt public-houſe which they found upon the road, he wrote a letter to Hatchway, deſiring him to receive this hedge-inamorata, and direct her to be cleaned and cloathed in a decent manner with all expedition, ſo that ſhe ſhould be touchable upon his arrival, which (on that account) he would defer for the ſpace of one day. This billet, together with the girl, he committed to the charge of

Pipes, after having laid ſtrong injunctions upon him to abſtain from all attempts upon her chaſtity, and ordered him to make the beſt of his way to the garriſon, while he himſelf croſſed the country to a market-town, where he propoſed to ſpend the night.

Tom, thus cautioned, proceeded with his charge, and being naturally taciturn, opened not his lips until he had performed the beſt part of his journey. But Thomas, notwithſtanding his irony appearance, was in reality compoſed of fleſh and blood. His deſire being titillated by the contact of a buxom wench, whoſe right-arm embraced his middle as he rode, his thoughts began to mutiny againſt his maſter, and he found it altogether impoſſible to withſtand the temptation of making love.

Nevertheleſs, he wreſtled with theſe rebellious ſuggeſtions with all the reaſon that Heaven had enabled him to exert; and that being totally overcome, his victorious paſſion ſuddenly broke out in this addreſs: ''Sblood! a believe maſter think I have no more ſtuff in my body than a dried haddock, to turn me adrift in the dark with ſuch a ſpanker. D'ye think he don't, my dear?' To this queſtion his fellow-traveller replied,—'Swanker anan!' And the lover reſumed his ſuit, ſaying, 'Oons! how you tickle my timber! Something ſhoots from your arm through my ſtowage, to the very keel-ſtone. Han't you got quickſilver in your hand?'—'Quickſilver!' ſaid the lady. 'D—n the ſilver that has croſſed my hand this month. D'ye think if I had ſilver, I ſhouldn't buy me a ſmock?'—'Adſooks! you baggage,' cried the lover, 'you ſhouldn't want a ſmock, nor a petticoat neither, if you could have a kindneſs for a true-hearted ſailor, as ſound and ſtrong as a nine-inch cable, that would keep all clear above-board, and every thing ſnug under the hatches.'—'Curſe your gum,' ſaid the charmer, 'what's your gay balls and your hatches to me?—'Do but let us bring to a little,' anſwered the wooer, whoſe

whose appetite was by this time whetted to a most ravenous degree, 'and I'll teach you to box the compass, my dear. Ah! you strapper, what a jolly bitch you are!'—'Bitch,' exclaimed this modern dulcinea, incensed at the opprobrious term; 'such a bitch as your mother, you dog! D—n you, I've a good mind to box your jaws instead of your come-piss. I'll let you know as how I am meat for your master, you fancy blackguard. You are worse than a dog, you old flinty faced, flea-bitten scrub: a dog wears his own coat, but you wear your master's.'

Such a torrent of disgraceful epithets from a person who had no cloaths at all, converted the gallant's love into choler, and he threatened to dismount and tye her to a tree, when she should have a taste of his cat and nine tails athwart her quarter; but, instead of being intimidated by his menaces, she set him at defiance, and held forth with such a flow of eloquence, as would have entitled her to a considerable share of reputation, even among the nymphs of Billingsgate; for this young lady, over and above a natural genius for altercation, had her talents cultivated among the venerable society of weeders, podders, and hoppers, with whom she had associated from her tender years. No wonder then, that she soon obtained a compleat victory over Pipes, who (as the reader may have observed) was very little addicted to the exercise of speech: indeed he was utterly disconcerted by her volubility of tongue; and being altogether unfurnished with answers to the distinct periods of her discourse, very wisely chose to save himself the expence of breath and argument, by giving her a full swing of cable, so that she might bring herself up; while he rode onwards in silent composure, without taking any more notice of his fair fellow-traveller than if she had been his master's cloak-bag.

In spite of all the dispatch he could make, it was late before he arrived at the garrison, where he delivered the letter and the lady to the lieutenant, who no sooner understood the intention of his friend, than he ordered

ordered all the tubs in the houſe to be carried into the hall and filled with water. Tom having provided himſelf with ſwabs and bruſhes, diveſted the fair ſtranger of the variegated drapery, which was immediately commited to the flames, and performed upon her ſoft and ſleek perſon the ceremony of ſcrubbing, as it is practiſed on board of the king's ſhips of war. Yet the nymph herſelf did not ſubmit to this purification without repining; ſhe curſed the director, who was upon the ſpot, with many abuſive alluſions to his wooden led; and as for Pipes, the operator, ſhe employed her talons ſo effectually upon his face, that the blood ran over his noſe in ſundry ſtreams; and next morning, when thoſe rivulets were dry, his countenance reſembled the rough bark of a plumb-tree, plaſtered with gum. Nevertheleſs, he did his duty with great perſeverance; cut off her hair cloſe to the ſcalp; handled his bruſhes with dexterity; applied his ſwabs of different magnitude and texture as the caſe required; and laſtly rinſed the whole body with a dozen pails of cold water, diſcharged upon her head.

Theſe ablutions being executed, he dried her with towels, accommodated her with a clean ſhift, and acting the part of a valet de chambre, cloathed her from head to foot in clean and decent apparel, which had belonged to Mrs. Hatchway; by which means her appearance was altered ſo much for the better, that when Peregrine arrived next day, he could ſcarce believe his own eyes. He was, for that reaſon extremely well pleaſed with his purchaſe, and now reſolved to indulge a whim which ſeized him at the very inſtant of his arrival.

He had (as I believe the reader will readily allow) made conſiderable progreſs in the ſtudy of character, from the higheſt rank to the moſt humble ſtation of life, and found it diverſified in the ſame manner, through every degree of ſubordination and precedency: nay, he moreover obſerved, that the converſation of thoſe who are dignified with the appellation of polite company, is neither more edifying nor entertaining

than

than that which is met with among the lower claſſes of mankind, and that the only eſſential difference in point of demeanor is the form of an education, which the meaneſt capacity can acquire without much ſtudy or application. Poſſeſſed of this notion, he determined to take the young mendicant under his own tutorage and inſtruction; in conſequence of which he hoped he ſhould, in a few weeks, be able to produce her in company as an accompliſhed young lady of uncommon wit, and an excellent underſtanding.

This extravagant plan he forthwith began to execute with great eagerneſs and induſtry; and his endeavours ſucceeded even beyond his expectation. The obſtacles, in ſurmounting of which he found the greateſt difficulty, was an inveterate habit of ſwearing, which had been indulged from her infancy, and confirmed by the example of thoſe among whom ſhe had lived. However, ſhe had the rudiments of good-ſenſe from nature, which taught her to liſten to wholeſome advice, and was ſo docile as to comprehend and retain the leſſons which her governor recommended to her attention; inſomuch, that he ventured in a few days to preſent her at table, among a ſet of country ſquires, to whom ſhe was introduced as niece to the lieutenant. In that capacity ſhe ſat with becoming eaſineſs of mien, (for ſhe was as void of the *mauvaiſe honte* as any ducheſs in the land) bowed very gracefully to the compliments of the gentlemen; and though ſhe ſaid little or nothing, becauſe ſhe was previouſly cautioned on that ſcore, ſhe more than once gave way to laughter, and her mirth happened to be pretty well timed. In a word, ſhe attracted the applauſe and admiration of the gueſts; who, after ſhe was withdrawn, complimented Mr. Hatchway upon the beauty, breeding, and good-humour of his kinſwoman.

But what contributed more than any other circumſtance to her ſpeedy improvement, was ſome ſmall inſight into the Primer which ſhe had acquired at a day-ſchool, during the life of her father, who was a day-

labourer

labourer in the country. Upon this foundation did Peregrine build a most elegant superstructure; he culled out choice sentences from Shakespeare, Otway, and Pope, and taught her to repeat them with an emphasis and theatrical cadence: he then instructed her in the names and epithets of the most celebrated players, which he directed her to pronounce occasionally, with an air of careless familiarity; and, perceiving that her voice was naturally clear, he enriched it with remnants of opera-tunes, to be hummed during a pause in conversation, which is generally supplied with the circulation of a pinch of snuff. By means of this cultivation, she became a wonderful proficient in the polite graces of the age; she, with great facility, comprehended the scheme of whist, though cribbage was her favourite game, with which she had amused herself in her vacant hours, from her first entrance into that profession of hopping; and brag soon grew familiar to her practice and conception.

Thus prepared, she was exposed to the company of her own sex, being first of all visited by the parson's daughter, who could not avoid shewing that civility to Mr. Hatchway's niece, after she had made her public appearance at church. Mrs. Clover, who had a great share of penetration, could not help entertaining some doubts about this same relation, whose name she had never heard the uncle mention, during the whole term of her residence at the garrison: but as the young lady was treated in that character, she would not refuse her acquaintance, and after having seen her at the castle, actually invited Miss Hatchway to her house. In short, she made a progress through almost all the families in the neighbourhood, and, by dint of her quotations, (which, by the bye, were not always judiciously used) she passed for a sprightly young lady of uncommon learning and taste.

Peregrine having, in this manner, initiated her in the beau monde of the country, conducted her to London, where she was provided with private lodgings and

a female

a female attendant; and put her immediately under the tuition of his valet de chambre, who had orders to instruct her in dancing and the French language. He attended her to plays and concerts three or four times a week; and when our hero thought her sufficiently accustomed to the sight of great company, he squired her in person to a public assembly, and danced with her among all the gay ladies of fashion: not but that there was still an evident air of rusticity and aukwardness in her demeanour, which was interpreted into an agreeable wildness of spirit, superior to the forms of common breeding. He afterwards found means to make her acquainted with some distinguished patterns of her own sex, by whom she was admitted into the most elegant parties, and continued to make good her pretensions to gentility with great circumspection. But, one evening, being at cards with a certain lady, whom she detected in the very act of unfair conveyance, she taxed her roundly with the fraud, and brought upon herself such a torrent of sarcastick reproof, as overbore all her maxims of caution, and burst open the flood-gates of her own natural repartee, twanged off with the appellation of b—— and w——, which she repeated with great vehemence, in an attitude of manual defiance, to the terror of her antagonist, and the astonishment of all present: nay, to such an unguarded pitch was she provoked, that starting up, she snapped her fingers, in testimony of disdain; and, as she quitted the room, applied her hand to that part which was the last of her that disappeared, inviting the company to kiss it, by one of it's coarsest denominations.

Peregrine was a little disconcerted at this oversight in her behaviour; which, by the demon of intelligence, was, in a moment conveyed to all the private companies in town: so that she was absolutely excluded from all polite communication; and Peregrine, for the present, disgraced among the modest part of his female acquaintance, many of whom not only forbade him their houses, on account of the impudent insult he had

committed

committed upon their honour as well as underſtanding, in palming a common trull upon them, as a young lady of birth and education; but alſo aſperſed his family, by affirming that ſhe was actually his own couſin-german, whom he had precipitately raiſed from the moſt abject ſtate of humility and contempt. In revenge for this calumny, our young gentleman explained the whole myſtery of her promotion, together with the motive that induced him to bring her into the faſhionable world; and repeated among his companions the extravagant encomiums which had been beſtowed upon her by the moſt deſerving matrons of the age.

Meanwhile, the infanta herſelf being rebuked by her benefactor for this inſtance of miſbehaviour, promiſed faithfully to keep a ſtricter guard for the future over her conduct, and applied herſelf with great aſſiduity to the ſtudies, in which ſhe was aſſiſted by the Swiſs, who gradually loſt the freedom of his heart, while ſhe was profiting by his inſtruction. In other words, ſhe made a conqueſt of her preceptor, who yielding to the inſtigations of the fleſh, choſe a proper opportunity to declare his paſſion, which was powerfully recommended by his perſonal qualifications; and his intention being honourable, ſhe liſtened to his propoſals of eſpouſing her in private. In conſequence of this agreement, they made an elopement together; and being buckled at the Fleet, conſummated their nuptials in private lodgings by the Seven Dials, from which the huſband next morning ſent a letter to our hero, begging forgiveneſs for the clandeſtine ſtep he had taken, which he ſolemnly proteſted was not owing to any abatement in his inviolable regard for his maſter, whom he ſhould always honour and eſteem to his lateſt breath, but entirely to the irreſiſtible charms of the young lady, to whom he was now ſo happy as to be joined in the ſilken bonds of marriage.

Peregrine, though at firſt offended at his valet's preſumption, was, upon ſecond thoughts, reconciled to the event, by which he was delived from an incumbrance;

for

for by this time he had performed his frolick, and began to be tired of his acquiſition. He reflected on the former fidelity of the Swiſs, which had been manifeſted in a long courſe of ſervice and attachment; and thinking it would be cruelly ſevere to abandon him to poverty and diſtreſs for one venial treſpaſs, he reſolved to pardon what he had done, and enable him in ſome ſhape to provide for the family which he had entailed upon himſelf.

With theſe ſentiments, he ſent a favourable anſwer to the delinquent, deſiring to ſee him as ſoon as his paſſion ſhould permit him to leave the arms of his ſpouſe for an hour or two; and Hadgi, in obedience to this intimation, repaired immediately to the lodgings of his maſter, before whom he appeared with a moſt penitential aſpect. Peregrine, though he could ſcarce help laughing at his rueful length of face, reprimanded him ſharply for his diſreſpect and ingratitude, in taking that by ſtealth which he might have had for aſking. The culprit aſſured him, that next to the vengeance of God, his maſter's diſpleaſure was that which, of all evils, he dreaded to incur; but that love had diſtracted his brain in ſuch a manner, as to baniſh every other conſideration but that of gratifying his deſire; and he owned that he ſhould not have been able to preſerve his fidelity and duty to his own father, had they interfered with the intereſt of his paſſion. He then appealed to his maſter's own heart for the remiſſion of his guilt, alluding to certain circumſtances of our hero's conduct, which evinced the deſperate effects of love. In ſhort, he made ſuch an apology, as extorted a ſmile from his offended judge, who not only forgave his tranſgreſſion, but alſo promiſed to put him in ſome fair way of earning a comfortable ſubſiſtence.

The Swiſs was ſo much affected with this inſtance of generoſity, that he fell upon his knees, and kiſſed his hand, praying to Heaven with great fervour to make him worthy of ſuch goodneſs and condeſcenſion. His ſcheme, he ſaid, was to open a coffee-houſe and

tavern

tavern in ſome creditable part of the town, in hopes of being favoured with the cuſtom of a numerous acquaintance he had made among upper ſervants and reputable tradeſmen, not doubting that his wife would be an ornament to his bar, and a careful manager of his affairs. Peregrine approved of the plan, towards the execution of which he made him and his wife a preſent of five hundred pounds, together with the promiſe of erecting a weekly club among his friends, for the reputation and advantage of the houſe.

Hadgi was ſo tranſported with his good fortune, that he ran to Pipes, who was in the room, and having hugged him with great cordiality, and made his obedience to his maſter, hied him home to his bride, to communicate his happineſs, cutting capers, and talking to himſelf all the way.

CHAP. III.

He is viſited by Pallet; contracts an Intimacy with a Newmarket Nobleman; and is by the knowing Ones taken in.

THIS affair being ſettled, and our adventurer, for the preſent, free of all female connections, he returned to his former courſe of faſt living among the bucks of the town, and performed innumerable exploits among whores, bullies, rooks, conſtables, and juſtices of the peace.

In the midſt of theſe occupations, he was one morning viſited by his old fellow-traveller Pallet, whoſe appearance gave him equal ſurprized and concern. Though the weather was ſevere, he was cloathed in the thin ſummer-dreſs which he had wore at Paris, and was now not only thread-bare, but in ſome parts actually patched; his ſtockings, by a repetition of that practice known among œconomiſts by the term of *coaxing*, hung like pudding-bags about his ankles: his ſhirt, though new waſhed, was of the ſaffron hue, and in divers places appeared through the crannies of his breeches: he had exchanged his own hair for a ſmoke-dried tye-periwig, which all the flour in his dredging-box had not been

able to whiten; his eyes were funk; his jaws length-ened beyond their ufual extenfion; and he feemed twenty years older than he looked when he and our hero parted at Rotterdam.

In fpite of all thefe evidences of decay, he accofted him with a meagre affectation of content and good-humour; ftruggled piteoufly to appear gay and unconcerned; profeffed his joy at feeing him in England; excufed himfelf for having delayed fo long to come and prefent his refpects; alledging, that fince his return he had been a mere flave to the fatisfaction of fome perfons of quality and tafte, who had infifted upon his finifhing fome pieces with the utmoft expedition.

Peregrine received him with that compaffion and complaifance which was natural to his difpofition; enquired about the health of Mrs. Pallet and his family, and afked if his friend the doctor was in town. The painter feemed to have refumed his refentment againft that gentleman, of whom he fpoke in contemptuous terms. 'The doctor,' faid he, 'is fo much overfhadowed with prefumption and felf-conceit, that his merit has no relief. It does not rife. There is no keeping in the picture, my dear Sir. All the fame as if I were to reprefent the moon under a cloud; there will be nothing but a deep mafs of fhade, with a little tiny fpeck of light in the middle, which would only ferve to make, as it were, the darknefs vifible: you underftand me. Had he taken my advice, it might have been better for him; but he is bigotted to his own opinion. You muft know, Mr. Pickle, upon our return to England, I counfelled him to compofe a little fmart, clever ode, upon my Cleopatra. As Gad fhall judge me, I thought it would have been of fome fervice in helping him out of obfcurity; for you know, as Sir Richard obferves,

> Soon will that die, which adds thy fame to mine:
> Let me then live, join'd to a work of thine.

By the bye, there is moft picturefque contraft in thefe lines, of and *thy* and *me*, *living* and *dying*, and *thine* and

mine.

mine. Ah! a pize upon it! Dick, after all, was the man. Ecod! he rounded it off. But, to return to this unhappy young man, would you believe it, he tossed up his nose at my friendly proposal, and gabbled something in Greek, which is not worth repeating. The case was this, my dear Sir; he was out of humour at the neglect of the world. He thought the poets of the age were jealous of his genius, and strove to crush it accordingly, while the rest of mankind wanted taste sufficient to discern it. For my own part, I profess myself one of these; and as the Clown in Billy Shakespeare says of the courtier's oath, had I sworn by the doctor's genius, that the pancakes were nought, they might have been for all that very good, yet shouldn't I have been forsworn? Let that be as it will, he retired from town in great dudgeon, and set up his rest near a hill in Derbyshire, with two tops, resembling Parnassus, and a well at the bottom, which he had christened Hyp-o-the-Green. Egad! if he stays in that habitation, 'tis my opinion he'll soon grow green with the hip indeed. He'll be glad of an opportunity to return to the flesh-pots of Egypt, and pay his court to the slighted Queen Cleopatra. Ha! well remembered! by this light you shall know, my good Sir, that this same Egyptian princess has been courted by so many gallants of taste, that, as I hope to live, I found myself in some sort of dilemma, because in parting with her to one, I should have disobliged all his rivals. Now, a man would not chuse to give offence to his friends; at least, I lay it down as a maxim, to avoid the smallest appearance of ingratitude. Perhaps I may be in the wrong: but every man has his way. For this reason, I proposed to all the candidates, that a lottery or raffle should be set on foot, by which every individual would have an equal chance for her good graces, and the prize be left to the decision of Fortune. The scheme was mightily relished; and the terms being such a trifle as half a guinea, the whole town crouded into my house, in order to subscribe. But there I was there humble

servant. "Gentlemen, you must have a little patience till my own particular friends are served." Among that number, I do myself the honour to consider Mr. Pickle. Here is a copy of the proposals: and if the list should be adorned with his name, I hope, notwithstanding his merited success among the young ladies, he will for once be shunned by that little vixen called Miss Fortune. He! he! he!'

So saying, he bowed with a thousand apish congees, and presented his paper to Peregrine; who seeing the number of subscribers was limited to one hundred, said he thought him too moderate in his expectations, as he did not doubt that his picture would be a cheap purchase at five hundred, instead of fifty pounds, at which the price was fixed. To this unexpected remark Pallet answered, that among the connoisseurs he would not pretend to appraise his picture; but that, in valuing his works, he was obliged to have an eye to the Gothick ignorance of the age in which he lived.

Our adventurer saw at once into the nature of this raffle, which was no other than a begging shift to dispose of a paltry piece, that he could not otherwise have sold for twenty shillings. However, far from shocking the poor man in distress, by dropping the least hint of his conjecture, he desired to be favoured with six chances, if the circumstances of his plan would indulge him so far; and the painter, after some hesitation, condescended to comply with his request, out of pure freindship and veneration; though he observed, that in so doing he must exclude some of his most intimate companions. Having received the money, he gave Pickle his address, desiring he would, with his convenience, visit the princess, who, he was sure, would display her most engaging attractions, in order to captivate his fancy; and took his leave, extremely well pleased with the success of his application.

Though Peregrine was tempted with the curiosity of seeing this portrait, which he imagined must contain some analogy to the ridiculous oddity of the painter, he

he would not expoſe himſelf to the diſagreeable alternative of applauding the performance, contrary to the dictates of conſcience and common ſenſe, or of condemning it, to the unſpeakable mortification of the miſerable author; and therefore never dreamed of returning the painter's viſit; nor did he ever hear of the lottery's being drawn.

About this time he was invited to ſpend a few weeks at the country ſeat of a certain nobleman, with whom he had contracted an acquaintance, in the courſe of his debauches, which we have already deſcribed. His lordſhip being remarkable for his ſkill and ſucceſs in horſe-racing, his houſe was continually filled with the connoiſſeurs and admirers of that ſport, upon which the whole converſation turned, inſomuch that Peregrine gradually imbibed ſome knowledge in horſe-fleſh, and the diverſions of the courſe; for the whole occupation of the day, excluſive of eating and drinking, conſiſted in viewing, managing, and exerciſing his lordſhip's ſtud.

Our hero looked upon theſe amuſements with an eye of taſte, as well as curioſity; he contemplated the animal as a beautiful and elegant part of the creation, and reliſhed the ſurpriſing exertion of it's ſpeed with a refined and claſſical delight. In a little time he became perſonally acquainted with every horſe in the ſtable, and intereſted himſelf in the reputation of each; while he alſo gratified his appetite for knowledge, in obſerving the methods of preparing their bodies, and training them to the race. His landlord ſaw and encouraged his eagerneſs, from which he promiſed himſelf ſome advantage; he formed ſeveral private matches for his entertainment, and flattered his diſcernment, by permitting him to be ſucceſsful in the firſt betts he made. Thus was he artfully decoyed into a ſpirit of keenneſs and adventure, and diſpoſed to depend upon his own judgment in oppoſition to that of people who had made horſe-racing the ſole ſtudy of their lives. He acompanied my lord to Newmarket; and entering at once into the

genius of the place, was marked as fair game by all the knowing ones there aſſembled, many of whom found means to *take him in*, in ſpite of all the cautions and admonitions of his lordſhip, who wanted to reſerve him for his own uſe.

It is almoſt impoſſible for any man, let him be never ſo fearful or phlegmatick, to be an unconcerned ſpectator in this buſy ſcene. The demon of play hovers in the air, like a peſtilential vapour, tainting the minds of all preſent with infallible infection, which communicates from one perſon to another like the circulation of a general panick. Peregrine was ſeized with this epidemick diſtemper to a violent degree; and, after having loſt a few looſe hundreds, in his progreſs through the various rookeries of the place, entered into partnerſhip with his noble friend in a grand match, upon the iſſue of which he ventured no leſs than three thouſand pounds. Indeed he would not have riſked ſuch a conſiderable ſum, had not his own confidence been reinforced by the opinion and concurrence of his lordſhip, who hazarded an equal bett upon the ſame event. Theſe two aſſociates engaged themſelves in the penalty of ſix thouſand pounds, to run one chaiſe and four againſt another, three times round the courſe; and our adventurer had the ſatiſfaction of ſeeing his antagoniſt diſtanced in the firſt and ſecond heat; but all on a ſudden, one of the horſes of his machine was knocked up, by which accident the victory was raviſhed almoſt from his very graſp, and he was obliged to endure the damage and the ſcorn.

He was deeply affected with this misfortune, which he imputed to his own extravagance and temerity, but diſcovered no external ſigns of affliction, becauſe his illuſtrious partner bore his loſs with the moſt philoſophick reſignation, conſoling himſelf, as well as Pickle, with the hope of making it up on ſome other occaſion. Nevertheleſs, our young gentleman could not help admiring and even envying his equanimity, not knowing that his lordſhip had managed matters ſo as to be a gainer by the

the misfortune; which to retrieve, Peregrine purchaſed ſeveral horſes, at the recommendation of his friend, and inſtead of returning to London, made a tour with him to all the celebrated races in England; at which, after ſeveral viciſſitudes of fortune, he made ſhift, before the end of the ſeaſon, to treble his loſs.

But his hopes ſeemed to increaſe with his ill-luck. In the beginning of winter he came to town, fully perſuaded that fortune muſt neceſſarily change, and that the next ſeaſon he ſhould reap the happy fruits of his experience. In this confidence he ſeemed to drown all ideas of prudence and œconomy. His former expence was mere parſimony, compared with that which he now incurred: he ſubſcribed to the opera, and half a dozen concerts at different parts of the town; was a benefactor to ſeveral hoſpitals; purchaſed a collection of valuable pictures; took an houſe, and furniſhed it in a moſt magnificent taſte; laid in a large ſtock of French wines, and gave extravagant entertainments to his quality-friends; who, in return, loaded him with compliments, and inſiſted upon his making uſe of their intereſt and good-will.

CHAP. IV.

He is taken into the Protection of a great Man; ſets up for Member of Parliament; is diſappointed in his Expectation, and finds himſelf egregiouſly out-witted.

AMONG theſe profeſſed patrons, the greateſt part of whom Peregrine ſaw through, there was one great perſonage who ſeemed to ſupport with dignity the ſphere in which fortune had placed him. His behaviour to Pickle was not a ſeries of grinning complaiſance in a flat repetition of general expreſſions of friendſhip and regard. He demeaned himſelf with a ſeemingly honeſt reſerve, in point of profeſſion; his advances to Peregrine appeared to be the reſult of deliberation and experiment; he chid the young gentleman for his extravagance with the authority of a parent, and the ſincerity of a faſt friend; and having by gradual enquiries made himſelf acquainted with the ſtate of his private affairs,

condemned his conduct with an air of candour and concern. He repreſented to him the folly and dangerous conſequences of the profligate life in which he had plunged himſelf: counſelled him with great warmth to ſell off his race-horſes which would otherwiſe inſenſibly eat him up; to retrench all ſuperfluous expence, which would only ſerve to expoſe him to the ridicule and ingratitude of thoſe who were benefited by it; to lay out his money upon ſecure mortgages, at good in- intereſt; and carry into execution his former deſign of ſtanding candidate for a borough, at the enſuing election for a new parliament; in which caſe this nobleman promiſed to aſsiſt him with his influence and advice; aſſuring him, that if he could once procure a ſeat in the houſe, he might look upon his fortune as already made.

Our adventurer perceived the wiſdom and ſanity of this advice, for which he made his acknowledgments to his generous monitor, proteſting that he would adhere to it in every particular, and immediately ſet about a reformation. He accordingly took cognizance of his moſt minute affairs; and after an exact ſcrutiny, gave his patron to underſtand, that, excluſive of his furniture, his fortune was reduced to fourteen thouſand three hundred and thirty pounds, in Bank and South-Sea annuities, over and above the garriſon and its appendages, which he reckoned at ſixty pounds a year. He therefore deſired, that as his lordſhip had been ſo kind as to favour him with his friendſhip and advice, he would extend his generoſity ſtill farther, by putting him in the way of making moſt advantage of his money. My lord ſaid, that for his own part he did not chuſe to meddle in money matters; that Mr. Pickle would find abundance of people ready to borrow it upon landed ſecurity; but that he ought to be extremely cautious in a tranſaction of ſuch conſequence; promiſing, at the ſame time, to employ his own ſteward in ſeeking out a mortgager to whom it might be ſafely lent.

This agent was accordingly ſet at work, and for a few days made a fruitleſs enquiry: ſo that the young

gentlemen was obliged to have recourſe to his own intelligence, by which he got notice of ſeveral people of reputed credit, who offered him mortgages for the whole ſum; but when he made a report of the particulars to his noble friend, his lordſhip ſtarted ſuch doubts and objections relating to each, that he was deterred from entering into any engagements with the propoſers; congratulating himſelf in the mean time, on his good fortune, in being favoured with the advice and direction of ſuch a ſage counſellor. Neverthleſs he began to be impatient, after having unſucceſsfully conſulted all the money brokers and conveyancers about town, and reſolved to try the expedient of a publick advertiſement. But he was perſuaded by my lord to poſtpone that experiment, until every other method ſhould have failed, becauſe it would attract the attention of all the pettifoggers in London, who (though they might not be able to over-reach) would infallibly harraſs and teaze him out of all tranquillity.

It was on the back of this converſation that Peregrine, chancing to meet the ſteward near his lord's houſe, ſtopped him in the ſtreet, to give him an account of his bad luck; at which the other expreſſed ſome concern, and rubbing his chin with his hand, in a muſing poſture told Pickle, there was a thought juſt come into his head, pointing out one way of doing his buſineſs effectually. The youth, upon this intimation, begged he would accompany him to the next coffee-houſe, in which having choſen a private ſituation, this grave manager gave him to underſtand, that a part of my lord's eſtate was mortgaged, in conſequenee of a debt contracted by his grandfather, for proviſion to the younger children of the family; and that the equity of redemption would be foreclosed in a few months, unleſs the burden could be diſcharged.

'My lord,' ſaid he, 'has always lived in a ſplendid manner, and notwithſtanding his ample fortune, together with the profits accruing from the poſts he enjoys, he ſaves ſo little money, that, upon this occaſion, I know

he

he will be obliged to borrow ten thouſand pounds, to make up the ſum that is requiſite to redeem the mortgage. Now, certain I am, that when his deſign comes to be known, he will be ſolicited on all hands by people deſirous of lending money upon ſuch undoubted ſecurity; and it is odds but he has already promiſed the preference to ſome particular acquaintance. However, as I know he has your intereſt very much at heart, I will (if you pleaſe) ſound his lordſhip upon the ſubject, and in a day or two give you notice of my ſucceſs.'

Peregrine, raviſhed with the proſpect of ſettling this affair ſo much to his ſatisfaction, thanked the ſteward for his friendly hint and undertaking, which he aſſured him ſhould be acknowledged by a more ſolid proof of his gratitude, provided the buſineſs could be brought to bear; and next day he was viſited by this kind manager, with the happy news of his lordſhip's having conſented to borrow ten thouſand pounds of his ſtock, upon mortgage, at the intereſt of five per cent. This information he received as an inſtance of the ſingular eſteem of his noble patron; and the papers being immediately drawn and executed, the money was depoſited in the hands of the mortgager, who, in the hearing of the lender, laid ſtrong injunctions on the ſteward to pay the intereſt punctually at quarter-day.

The beſt part of our hero's fortune being thus happily depoſited, and the agent gratified with a preſent of fifty pieces, he began to put his retrenching ſcheme in execution; all his ſervants (Pipes excepted) were diſcharged, his chariot and running-horſes diſpoſed of, his houſe-keeping broke up, and his furniture ſold by auction; nay, the heat of his diſpoſition was as remarkable in this, as any other tranſaction of his life; for every ſtep of his ſaving project was taken with ſuch eagerneſs, and even precipitation, that moſt of his companions thought he was either ruined or mad. But he anſwered all their expoſtulations with a ſtring of prudent apophthegms, ſuch as, *The ſhorteſt follies are the beſt;—Better to retrench upon conviction than compulſion;*

son; and divers other wise maxims, seemingly the result of experience and philosophick reflection. To such a degree of enthusiasm did his present œconomy prevail, that he was actually seized with the desire of amassing; and as he every day received proposals, from those brokers whom he had employed, about the disposal of his cash, he at length ventured fifteen hundred pounds upon bottomry, being tempted by the excessive premium.

But it must be observed, for the honour of our adventurer, that this reformation did not at all interfere with the good qualities of his heart. He was still as friendly and benevolent as ever, though his liberality was more subject to the restraint of reason; and he might have justly pleaded, in vindication of his generosity, that he retrenched the superfluities in his own way of living, in order to preserve the power of assisting his fellow-creatures in distress. Numberless were the objects to which he extended his charity in private. Indeed, he exerted this virtue in secret, not only on account of avoiding the charge of ostentation, but also because he was ashamed of being detected in such an aukward unfashionable practice, by the censorious observers of this humane generation. In this particular, he seemed to confound the ideas of virtue and vice; for he did good as other people do evil, by stealth; and was so capricious in point of behaviour, that frequently, in publick, he wagged his tongue in satirical animadversions upon that poverty which his hand had in private relieved. Yet, far from shunning the acquaintance, or discouraging the solicitation, of those who he thought wanted his assistance, he was always accessible, open, and complacent to them, even when the haughtiness of his temper kept his superiors at a distance, and often saved a modest man the anguish and confusion of declaring himself, by penetrating into his necessity, and anticipating his request, in a frank offer of his purse and friendship.

Not that he practised this beneficence to all the needy of his acquaintance, without distinction; there is always a set of idle, profligate fellows, who having squandered

ſquandered away their own fortunes, and conquered all ſenſe of honour and ſhame, maintain themſelves by borrowing from thoſe who have not yet finiſhed the ſame career, and want reſolution to reſiſt their importunate demands. To theſe he was always inflexible; though he could not abſolutely detach himſelf from their company, becauſe, by dint of effrontery, and ſuch of their original connections as they have been able to retain, they find admiſſion to all places of faſhionable reſort.

Several unſucceſsful attacks had been made upon his pocket by beggars of this claſs. One of the moſt artful of them, having one day joined him in the Mall, and made the uſual obſervation on the weather, damned all the fogs of London, and began a diſſertation on the difference of air, preferring that of the country in which he was born to any climate under the ſun. 'Was you ever in Glouceſterſhire?' (ſaid he to Peregrine.) Who replying in the negative, he thus went on: 'I have got a houſe there, where I ſhall be glad to ſee you. Let us go down together, during the Eaſter holidays; I can promiſe you good country fare and wholeſome exerciſe; for I have every thing within myſelf, and as good a pack of fox hounds as any in the three kingdoms. I ſha'n't pretend to expatiate upon the elegance of the houſe, which to be ſure is an old building; and theſe, you know, are generally cold, and not very convenient. But, curſe the houſe! the dirty acres about it are the thing; and a damn'd fine parcel they are, to be ſure—If my old grandmother was dead—ſhe can't live another ſeaſon, for ſhe's turned of fourſcore, and quite wore out: nay, as for that matter, I believe I have got a letter in my pocket, giving an account of her being deſpaired of by the doctors. Let me ſee!—No, d—n it! I left it at home, in the pocket of another coat.'

Pickle, who from the beginning of this harangue ſaw it's tendency, ſeemed to yield the moſt ſerious attention to what he ſaid; breaking in upon it, every now and then, with the interjections, *Hum! Ha! The Deuce!*

and

and ſeveral civil queſtions, from which the other conceived happy omens of ſucceſs; till perceiving they had advanced as far as the paſſage into St. James's, the miſchievous youth interrupted him all at once, ſaying—'I ſee you are for the end of the walk; this is my way.' With theſe words he took his leave of the saunterer, who would have delayed his retreat, by calling to him aloud, that he had not yet deſcribed the ſituation of his caſtle. But Peregrine, without ſtopping, anſwered in the ſame tone—'Another time will do as well!' and in a moment diſappeared, leaving the projector very much mortified with his diſappointment; for his intention was to cloſe the deſcription with a demand of twenty pieces, to be repaid out of the firſt remittance he ſhould receive from his eſtate.

It would have been well for our hero, had he always acted with the ſame circumſpection; but he had his unguarded moments, in which he fell a prey to the unſuſpecting integrity of his own heart. There was a perſon among the number of his acquaintances, whoſe converſation he particularly reliſhed, becauſe it was frank, agreeable, and fraught with many ſenſible obſervations, upon the craft and treachery of mankind. This gentleman had made a ſhift to diſcuſs a very genteel fortune, though it was ſpent with taſte and reputation, and now he was reduced to his ſhifts for the maintenance of his family, which conſiſted of a wife and child. Not that he was deſtitute of the neceſſaries of life, being comfortably ſupplied by the bounty of his friends; but this was a proviſion not at all ſuited to his inclination; and he had endeavoured, by divers unſucceſsful ſchemes, to retrieve his former independency.

Peregrine happened one evening to be ſitting alone in a coffee-houſe, where he overheard a converſation between this ſchemer and another gentleman, touching an affair that engaged his attention. The ſtranger had been left truſtee for fifteen hundred pounds bequeathed to the other's daughter by an aunt, and was ſtrongly ſolicited to pay the money to the child's father,

who assured him, he had then an opportunity to lay it out in such a manner as would greatly conduce to the advantage of his family. The trustee reminded him of the nature of his charge which made him accountable for the money, until the child should have attained the age of eighteen; but at the same time gave him to understand, that if he could procure such securities as would indemnify him from the consequences, he would forthwith pay the legacy into his hands. To this proposal the father replied, that it was not to be supposed he would risk the fortune of his only child, upon an idle scheme, or precarious issue: and therefore he thought it reasonable, that he should have the use of it in the mean time; and that, as to security, he was loth to trouble any of his friends about an affair which might be compromised without their interposition; observing, that he would not look upon his condescension as a favour, if obtained by a security, on which he could borrow the same sum from any usurer in town.

After much importunity on one side, and evasion on the other, the monied gentleman told him, that though he would not surrender the sum deposited in his hands for the use of his daughter, he would lend him what he should have occasion for in the mean time: and if, upon her being of age, he should be able to obtain her concurrence, the money should be placed to her account, provided he could find any person of credit, who would join with him in a bond for the assurance of the lender. This proviso was an obstruction which the other would not have been able to surmount without great difficulty, had not his cause been espoused by our hero, who thought it was a pity a man of honour and understanding should suffer in his principal concerns on such a paltry consideration. He therefore, presuming on his acquaintance, interposed in the conversation as a friend, who interested himself in the affair; and being fully informed of the particulars, offered himself as a security for the lender.

This gentleman being a stranger to Peregrine, he

was

was next day made acquainted with his funds; and, without farther scruple, accommodated his friend with one thousand pounds, for which he took their bond, payable in six months, though he protested that the money should never be demanded, until the infant should be of age, unless some accident should happen which he could not then foresee. Pickle believed this declaration sincere, because he could have no interest in dissembling: but what he chiefly depended upon, for his own security, was the integrity and confidence of the borrower, who assured him, that happen what would, he should be able to stand between him and all danger; the nature of this plan being such, as would infallibly treble the sum in a very few months.

In a little time after this transaction, writs being issued out for electing a new parliament, our adventurer, by the advice of his patron, went into the country, in order to canvass for a borough, and lined his pockets with a competent share of bank notes for the occasion. But, in this project, he unfortunately happened to interfere with the interest of a great family in the opposition, who for a long series of years had made members for that place; and were now so much offended at the intrusion of our young gentleman, that they threatened to spend ten thousand pounds in frustrating his design. This menace was no other than an incitement to Peregrine, who confided so much in his influence and address, that he verily believed he should be able to baffle his grace, even in his own territories. By that victory he hoped to establish his reputation and interest with the minister, who, through the recommendation of his noble friend, countenanced his cause, and would have been very well pleased to see one of his greatest enemies suffer such a disagreeable overthrow, which would have, moreover, in a great measure shaken his credit with his faction.

Our hero, intoxicated with the ideas of pride and ambition, put all his talents to the test in the execution of this project. He spared no expence in treating the

electors; but finding himſelf rivalled, in this reſpect, by his competitor, who was powerfully ſupported, he had recourſe to thoſe qualifications in which he thought himſelf ſuperior. He made balls for the ladies, viſited the matrons of the corporation, adapted himſelf to their various humours with ſurpriſing facility, drank with thoſe who loved a cheriſhing cup in private, made love to the amorous, prayed with the religious, goſſipped with thoſe who delighted in ſcandal, and with great ſagacity contrived agreeable preſents to them all. This was the moſt effectual method of engaging ſuch electors as were under the influence of their wives. As for the reſt, he aſſailed them in their own way, ſetting whole hogſheads of wine and beer abroach for the benefit of all comers; and into thoſe ſordid hearts that liquor would not open, he found means to convey himſelf by the help of a golden key.

While he thus exerted himſelf, his antagoniſt was not idle; his age and infirmities would not permit him to enter perſonally into their parties; but his ſtewards and adherents beſtirred themſelves with great induſtry and perſeverance. The market for votes ran ſo high, that Pickle's ready-money was exhauſted before the day of election; and he was obliged to write to his patron an account of the dilemma to which he was reduced; intreating him to take ſuch ſpeedy meaſures, as would enable him to finiſh the buſineſs which he had ſo happily begun.

This nobleman communicated the circumſtances of the caſe to the miniſter, and in a day or two our candidate found credit with the receiver-general of the county, who lent him twelve hundred pounds on his perſonal note, payable on demand. By means of this new ſupply, he managed matters ſo ſucceſsfully, that an evident majority of votes was ſecured in his intereſt; and nothing could have obſtructed his election, had not the noble peer, who ſet up his competitor, in order to avoid the ſhame and mortification of being foiled in his own borough, offered to compromiſe the affair with his

honour, by giving up two members in another place, provided the opposition should cease in his own corporation. This proposal was greedily embraced. On the eve of election, Peregrine received an intimation from his patron, desiring him to quit his pretensions, on pain of his and the minister's displeasure; and promising that he should be elected for another place.

No other disappointment in life could have given him such chagrin as he felt at the receipt of this tantalizing order, by which the cup of success was snatched from his lip, and all the vanity of his ambitious hope humbled in the dust. He cursed the whole chain of his court connections: inveighed with great animosity against the rascally scheme of politicks, to which he was sacrificed; and in conclusion swore, he would not give up the fruits of his own address for the pleasure of any minister upon earth. This laudable resolution, however, was rendered ineffectual by his friend the receiver-general, who was bearer of the message, and (after having, in vain, endeavoured to persuade him to submission) fairly arrested him upon the spot for the money he had advanced; this expedient being performed by virtue of a writ which he had been advised to take out, in case the young man should prove refractory.

The reader, who by this time must be pretty well acquainted with the disposition of our adventurer, may easily conceive how he relished this adventure. At first, all the faculties of his soul were swallowed up in astonishment and indignation; and some minutes elapsed before his nerves would obey the impulse of his rage, which manifested itself in such an application to the temples of the plaintiff, as laid him sprawling on the floor. This assault, which was committed in a tavern whither he had been purposely decoyed, attracted the regard of the bailiff and his followers, who, to the number of four, rushed upon him at once, in order to overpower him; but his wrath inspired him with such additional strength and agility, that he disengaged him-

ſelf from them in a trice, and ſeizing a poker, which was the firſt weapon that preſented itſelf to his hand, exerciſed it upon their ſkulls with incredible dexterity and execution. The officer himſelf, who had been the firſt that preſumed to lay violent hands upon him, felt the firſt effects of his fury, in a blow upon his jaws, in conſequence of which he loſt three of his teeth, and fell athwart the body of the receiver, with which he formed the figure of a St. Andrew's croſs: one of the myrmidons ſeeing the fate of his chief, would not venture to attack the victor in front, but wheeling to one ſide, made an attempt upon him in flank, and was received obliquely by our hero's left-hand and foot, ſo maſterly diſpoſed to the right-ſide of his leg, and the left-ſide of his neck, that he bolted head-foremoſt into the chimney, where his chin was encountered by the grate, which in a moment ſeared him to the bone. The reſt of the detachment did not think proper to maintain the diſpute, but evacuating the room with great expedition, locked the door on the out-ſide, and bellowed aloud to the receiver's ſervants, beſeeching them to come to the aſſiſtance of their maſter, who was in danger of his life.

Meanwhile, this gentleman having recollected himſelf, demanded a parley; which having with difficulty obtained of our incenſed candidate, in conſequence of the moſt ſubmiſſive application, he complained grievouſly of the young gentleman's intemperance and heat of diſpoſition, and very calmly repreſented the danger of his raſhneſs and indiſcretion. He told him, that nothing could be more outrageous or idle, than the reſiſtance he had made againſt the laws of his country, becauſe he would find it impracticable to withſtand the whole executive power of the county, which he could eaſily raiſe to apprehend and ſecure him; that over and above the diſgrace that would accrue to him from this imprudent conduct, he would knock his own intereſt on the head, by diſobliging his friends in the adminiſtration, who were, to his knowledge, at preſent very

well diſpoſed to do him ſervice; that, for his own part, what he had done was by the expreſs order of his ſuperiors, and not out of any deſire of diſtreſſing him; and that, far from being his enemy, notwithſtanding the ſhocking inſult he had ſuſtained, he was ready to withdraw the writ, provided he would liſten to any reaſonable terms of accommodation.

Peregrine, who was not more prone to anger than open to conviction, being appeaſed by his condeſcenſion, moved by his arguments, and chid by his own reflection, for what he had done in the precipitation of his wrath, began to give ear to his remonſtrances; and the bailiffs being ordered to withdraw, they entered into a conference, the reſult of which was, our adventurer's immediate departure for London: ſo that next day his competitor was unanimouſly choſen, becauſe nobody appeared to oppoſe his election.

The diſcontented Pickle, on his arrival in town, went directly to the houſe of his patron; to whom, in the anguiſh of his diſappointment, he bitterly complained of the treatment he had received, by which, beſides the diſgrace of his overthrow, he was no leſs than two thouſand pounds out of pocket, excluſive of the debt for which he ſtood engaged to the receiver. His lordſhip, who was prepared for this expoſtulation, on his knowledge of the young man's impetuous temper, anſwered all the articles of his charge with great deliberation; giving him to underſtand the motives that induced the miniſter to quit his intereſt in that borough, and ſoothing him with aſſurances that his loſs would be amply rewarded by his honour, to whom he was next day introduced by this nobleman, in the warmeſt ſtyle of recommendation. The miniſter, who was a pattern of complaiſance, received him with the moſt engaging affability; thanked him very kindly for his endeavours to ſupport and ſtrengthen the intereſt of the adminiſtration; and faithfully promiſed to lay hold on the firſt opportunity to expreſs the ſenſe he had of his zeal and attachment; deſiring to ſee him often at

his levee, that in the multiplicity of business he might not be in danger of forgetting his services and desert.

CHAP. V.

Peregrine commences Minister's Dependent; meets by Accident with Mrs. Gauntlet; and descends gradually in the Condition of Life.

THIS reception, favourable as it was, did not please Peregrine, who had too much discernment to be cajoled with general promises, at a time when he thought himself intitled to the most particular assurance. He accordingly signified his disgust to his introductor; giving him to understand, that he laid his account with being chosen representative of one of those boroughs for which he had been sacrificed. His lordship agreed to the reasonableness of his expectation; observing, however, that he could not suppose the minister would enter upon business with him on his first visit; and that it would be time enough at his next audience to communicate his demand.

Notwithstanding this remonstrance, our hero continued to indulge his suspicion and chagrin, and even made a point of it with his patron, that his lordship should next day make application in his behalf, lest the two seats should be filled up, on pretence of his inclinations being unknown. Thus importuned, my lord went to his principal, and returned with an answer, importing that his honour was extremely sorry that Mr. Pickle had not signified his request before the boroughs in question were promised to two gentlemen whom he could not now disappoint with any regard to his own credit or interest; but as several persons who would be chosen were, to his certain knowledge, very aged and infirm, he did not doubt that there would be plenty of vacant seats in a very short time, and then the young gentleman might depend upon his friendship.

Peregrine was so much irritated at this intimation, that in the first transports of his anger, he forgot the respect he owed to his friend, and in his presence inveighed against the minister, as a person devoid of gra-

titude and candour; protesting, that if ever an opportunity should offer itself, he would spend the whole remains of his fortune in opposing his measures. The nobleman having given him time to exhaust the impetuosity of his passion, rebuked him very calmly for his disrespectful expressions, which were equally injurious and indiscreet; assured him, that this project of revenge, if ever put in execution, would redound to his own prejudice and confusion; and advised him to cultivate and improve, with patience and assiduity, the footing he had already obtained in the minister's good graces.

Our hero, convinced of the truth, though not satisfied with the occasion of his admonitions, took his leave in a fit of sullen discontent, and began to ruminate upon the shattered posture of his affairs. All that now remained of the ample fortune he had inherited, was the sum he had deposited in his lordship's hands, together with fifteen hundred pounds he had ventured on bottomry, and the garrison, which he had left for the use and accommodation of the lieutenant; and on the *per contra* side of his account, he was debtor for the supply he had received from the receiver-general, and the money for which he was bound in behalf of his friend: so that he found himself, for the first time of his life, very much embarrassed in his circumstances; for, of the first half year's interest of his ten thousand, which was punctually paid, he had but fourscore pounds in bank, without any prospect of a farther supply till the other term, which was at the distance of four long months. He seriously reflected upon the uncertainty of human affairs; the ship with his fifteen hundred pounds might be lost; the gentleman for whom he was security, might miscarry in this, as well as in his former projects; and the minister might one day, through policy or displeasure, expose him to the mercy of his dependent, who was in possession of his notes.

These suggestions did not at all contribute to the

ease of our adventurer's mind, already ruffled by his disappointment. He cursed his own folly and extravagance, by which he was reduced to such an uncomfortable situation. He compared his own conduct with that of some young gentlemen of his acquaintance, who while he was squandering away the best part of his inheritance, had improved their fortunes, strengthened their interest, and increased their reputation. He was abandoned by his gaiety and good-humour; his countenance gradually contracted itself into a representation of severity and care; he dropped all his amusements and the companions of his pleasure, and turned his whole attention to the minister, at whose levee he never failed to appear.

While he thus laboured in the wheel of dependence, with all that mortification which a youth of his pride and sensibility may be supposed to feel from such a disagreeable necessity, he one day heard himself called by name as he crossed the Park, and turning, perceived the wife of Captain Gauntlet, with another lady. He no sooner recognized the kind Sophy, than he accosted her with his wonted civility of friendship; but his former sprightly air was metamorphosed into such austerity, or rather dejection of feature, that she could scarce believe her own eyes; and in her astonishment, 'Is it possible,' said she, 'that the gay Mr. Pickle, should be so much altered in such a short space of time!' He made no other reply to this exclamation but by a languid smile; and asked how long she had been in town: observing, that he would have paid his compliments to her at her own lodgings, had he been favoured with the least intimation of her arrival. After having thanked him for his politeness, she told him it was not owing to any abatement of her friendship and esteem for him that she had omitted to give him that notice; but his abrupt departure from Windsor, and the manner in which he quitted Mr. Gauntlet, had given her just grounds to believe, that they had incurred his displeasure; which suspicion was reinforced by his long silence

and

and neglect from that period to the present time. She observed it was still farther confirmed, by his forbearing to enquire for Emilia and her brother. 'Judge, then,' said she, 'if I had any reason to believe that you would be pleased to hear that I was in town. However, I will not detain you at present, because you seem to be engaged about some particular business; but if you will favour me with your company at breakfast to-morrow, I shall be much pleased, and honoured to boot, by the visit.' So saying, she gave him a direction to her lodgings; and he took his leave, with a faithful promise of seeing her at the appointed time.

He was very much affected with this advance of Sophy, which he considered as an instance of her uncommon sweetness of temper; he felt strange longings of returning friendship towards Godfrey; and the remembrance of Emilia melted his heart, already softened with grief and mortification. Next day, he did not neglect his engagement, and had the pleasure of enjoying a long conversation with this sensible young lady, who gave him to understand, that her husband was with his regiment; and presented to him a fine boy, the first fruits of their love, whom they had christened by the name of Peregrine, in memory of the friendship which had subsisted between Godfrey and our youth.

This proof of their regard, notwithstanding the interruption in their correspondence, made a deep impression upon the mind of our adventurer, who having made the warmest acknowledgments for this undeserved mark of respect, took the child in his arms, and almost devoured him with kisses, protesting before God, that he should always consider him with the tenderness of a parent. This was the highest compliment he could pay to the gentle Sophy, who again kindly chid him for his disdainful and precipitate retreat immediately after her marriage; and expressed an earnest desire of seeing him and the captain reconciled. He assured her nothing could give him greater satisfaction than such an event, to which he would contribute all that lay in his

 power,

power, though he could not help looking upon himself as injured by Captain Gauntlet's behaviour, which denoted a ſuſpicion of his honour, as well as contempt for his underſtanding. The lady undertook for the conceſſion of her huſband, who (ſhe told him) had been extremely ſorry for his own heat, after Mr. Pickle's departure, and would have followed him to the garriſon, in order to ſolicit his forgiveneſs, had he not been reſtrained by certain punctilios, occaſioned by ſome acrimonious expreſſions that dropped from Peregrine at the inn.

After having cleared up this miſunderſtanding, ſhe proceeded to give an account of Emilia, whoſe behaviour, at that juncture, plainly indicated a continuance of affection for her firſt lover; and deſired, that he would give her full powers to bring that matter alſo to an accommodation: 'For I am not more certain of my own exiſtence,' ſaid ſhe, 'than that you are ſtill in poſſeſſion of my ſiſter's heart.' At this declaration the tear ſtarted in his eye: but he ſhook his head, and declined her good offices, wiſhing that the young lady might be much more happy than ever he ſhould be able to make her.

Mrs. Gauntlet, confounded at theſe expreſſions, and moved by the deſponding manner in which they were delivered, begged to know if any new obſtacle was raiſed by ſome late change in his ſentiments or ſituation; and he, in order to avoid a painful explanation, told her, that he had long deſpaired of being able to vanquiſh Emilia's reſentment, and for that reaſon quitted the purſuit, which he would never renew, howſoever his heart might ſuffer by that reſolution; though he took Heaven to witneſs, that his love, eſteem, and admiration of her, were not in the leaſt impaired: but the true motive of his laying aſide his deſign, was the conſciouſneſs of his decayed fortune; which, by adding to the ſenſibility of his pride, increaſed the horror of another repulſe. She expreſſed her concern for this determination, both on his own account, and in behalf of

Emilia, whose happiness (in her opinion) depended upon his constancy and affection; and she would have questioned him more minutely about the state of his affairs, had not he discouraged the enquiry, by seeking to introduce another subject of conversation.

After mutual protestations of friendship and regard, he promised to visit her often during her residence in town; and took his leave in a strange perplexity of mind, occasioned by the images of love intruding upon the remonstrances of carking care. He had some time ago forsaken those extravagant companions with whom he had rioted in the hey-day of his fortune, and began to consort with a graver and more sober species of acquaintance; but he now found himself disabled from cultivating the society of these also, who were men of ample estates, and liberal dispositions; in consequence of which, their parties were too expensive for the consumptive state of his finances; so that he was obliged to descend to another degree, and mingle with a set of old-bachelors and younger brothers, who subsisted on slender annuities, or what is called a bare competency in the publick funds. This association was composed of second-hand politicians and minor criticks, who in the forenoon saunter in the Mall, or lounge at shows of pictures, appear in the drawing-room once or twice a week, dine at an ordinary, decide disputes in a coffee-house with an air of superior intelligence, frequent the pit of the play-house, and once in a month spend an evening with some noted actor, whose remarkable sayings they repeat for the entertainment of their ordinary friends.

After all, he found something comfortable enough in the company of these gentlemen, who never interested his passions to any violence of transport, nor teazed him with impertinent curiosity about his private affairs: for though many of them had maintained a very long, close, and friendly correspondence with each other, they never dreamed of enquiring into particular concerns; and if one of the two who were most inti-

mately connected, had been aſked how the other made a ſhift to live, he would have anſwered, with great truth, ' Really, that is more than I know.' Notwithſtanding this phlegmatick indifference, which is of the true Engliſh production, they were all inoffenſive, good-natured people, who loved a joke and a ſong, delighted in telling a merry ſtory, and prided themſelves in the art of catering, eſpecially in the articles of fiſh, veniſon, and wild-fowl.

Our young gentleman was not received among them on the footing of a common member, who makes intereſt for his admiſſion; he was courted as a perſon of ſuperior genius and importance, and his compliance looked upon as an honour to the ſociety. This their idea of his pre-eminence was ſupported by his converſation, which, while it was more liberal and learned than that to which they had been accuſtomed, was tinctured with an aſſuming air, ſo agreeably diffuſed, that, inſtead of producing averſion, it commanded reſpect. They not only appealed to him in all doubts relating to foreign parts, to which one and all of them were ſtrangers, but alſo conſulted his knowledge in hiſtory and divinity, which were frequently the topicks of their debates; and in poetry of all kinds, he decided with ſuch magiſterial authority, as even weighed againſt the opinions of the players themſelves. The variety of characters he had ſeen and obſerved, and the high ſpheres of life in which he had ſo lately moved, furniſhed him with a thouſand entertaining anecdotes. When he became a little familiarized to his diſappointments, ſo that his natural vivacity began to revive, he flaſhed among them in ſuch a number of bright ſallies, as ſtruck them with admiration, and conſtituted himſelf a claſſick in wit; inſomuch, that they began to retail his remnants, and even invited ſome particular friends to come and hear him hold forth. One of the players, who had for many years ſtrutted about the taverns in the neighbourhood of Covent Garden as the Grand Turk of wit and humour, began to find his admirers melt away; and a

certain

certain petulant phyſician, who had ſhone at almoſt all the Port-clubs in that end of the town, was actually obliged to import his talents into the city, where he has now happily taken root.

Nor was this acceſs to be wondered at, if we conſider that, over and above his natural genius and education, our adventurer ſtill had the opportunity of knowing every thing which happened among the great, by means of his friend Cadwallader, with whom he ſtill maintained his former intimacy, though it was now chequered with many occaſional tifts, owing to the ſarcaſtick remonſtrances of the miſanthrope, who diſapproved of thoſe ſchemes which miſcarried with Peregrine, and now took unſeaſonable methods of valuing himſelf upon his own foreſight: nay, he was between whiles like a raven croaking preſages of more ill-luck from the deceit of the miniſter, the diſſimulation of his patron, the folly of the projector for whom he was bound, the uncertainty of the ſeas, and the villainy of thoſe with whom he had entruſted his caſh; for Crabtree ſaw and conſidered every thing through a perſpective of ſpleen, that always reflected the worſt ſide of human nature.

For theſe reaſons our young gentleman began to be diſguſted, at certain intervals, with the character of this old man, whom he now thought a moroſe cynick, not ſo much incenſed againſt the follies and vices of mankind, as delighted with the diſtreſs of his fellow-creatures. Thus he put the moſt unfavourable conſtruction on the principles of his friend, becauſe he found himſelf juſtly fallen under the laſh of his animadverſion. This ſelf-accuſation very often diſſolves the cloſeſt friendſhip: a man, conſcious of his own indiſcretion, is implacably offended at the rectitude of his companion's conduct, which he conſiders as an inſult upon his failings, never to be forgiven, even though he has not taſted the bitterneſs of reproof, which no ſinner can commodiouſly digeſt. The friendſhip, therefore, ſubſiſting between Crabtree and Pickle, had of late ſuf-

fered ſeveral ſymptomatick ſhocks that ſeemed to prognoſticate a total diſſolution; a great deal of ſmart dialogue had paſſed in their private converſations, and the ſenior began to repent of having placed his confidence in ſuch an imprudent, head-ſtrong, ungovernable youth.

It was in ſuch paroxyſms of diſpleaſure that he propheſied misfortune to Peregrine; and even told him one morning, that he had dreamed of the ſhip-wreck of the two Eaſt Indiamen, on board of which he had hazarded his money. But this was no other than a falſe viſion; for in a few weeks one of them arrived at her moorings in the river, and he received a thouſand in lieu of eight hundred pounds, which he had lent upon bond to one of the mates. At the ſame time he was informed, that othe other ſhip in which he was concerned, had, in all probability, loſt her paſſage for the ſeaſon, by being unable to weather the Cape. He was not at all concerned at that piece of news, knowing, that the longer he ſhould lie out of his money, he would have the more intereſt to receive; and finding his preſent difficulties removed by this ſupply, his heart began to dilate, and his countenance to reſume it's former alacrity.

This ſtate of exultation, however, was ſoon interrupted by a ſmall accident, which he could not foreſee: he was viſited one morning by the perſon who had lent his friend a thouſand pounds on his ſecurity, and gave to underſtand, that the borrower had abſconded, in conſequence of a diſappointment, by which he had loſt the whole ſum, and all hopes of retrieving it; ſo that our hero was now liable for the debt, which he beſought him to diſcharge according to the bond, that he (the lender) might not ſuffer by his humanity. It may be eaſily conceived that Peregrine did not receive this intelligence in cold blood. He curſed his own imprudence in contracting ſuch engagements with an adventurer whom he did not ſufficiently know. They exclaimed againſt the treachery of the projector; and having for ſome time indulged his reſentment in threats

and

and imprecations, enquired into the nature of the scheme which had miscarried.

The lender, who had informed himself of the whole affair, gratified his curiosity in this particular, by telling him that the fugitive had been cajoled by a certain knight of the post, who undertook to manage the thousand pounds in such a manner as would in a very little time, make him perfectly independent; and thus he delineated the plan: 'One half of the sum,' said he, 'shall be laid out in jewels, which I will pawn to certain persons of credit and fortune, who lend money upon such pledges at an exorbitant interest. The other shall be kept for relieving them, so that they may be again deposited with a second set of those honourable usurers; and when they shall have been circulated in this manner through a variety of hands, we will extort money from each of the pawn-brokers, by threatening them with a publick prosecution, for exacting illegal interest; and I know that they will bleed freely, rather than be exposed to the infamy attending such an accusation.' The scheme was feasible, and though not very honourable, made such an impression upon the needy borrower, that he assented to the proposal; and, by our hero's credit, the money was raised. The jewels were accordingly purchased, pawned, and relieved, and re-pledged by the agent, who undertook to manage the whole affair; and so judiciously was the project executed, that he could have easily proved each lender guilty of the charge. Having thus far successfully transacted the business, this faithful agent visited them severally on his own account, to give them intimation, that his employer intended to sue them on the statute of usury; upon which, every one for himself bribed the informer to withdraw his evidence, by which alone he could be convicted; and having received these gratifications, he had thought proper to retreat into France with the whole booty, including the original thousand that put them in motion. In consequence of this decampment, the borrower had withdrawn him-

ſelf; ſo that the lender was obliged to have recourſe to his ſecurity.

This was a very mortifying account to our young gentleman, who in vain reminded the narrator of his promiſe, importing, that he would not demand the money, until he ſhould be called to an account by his ward; and obſerved, that long before that period, the fugitive might appear and diſcharge the debt. But the other was deaf to theſe remonſtrances; alledging that his promiſe was proviſional, on the ſuppoſition that the borrower would deal candidly and fairly; that he had forfeited all title to his friendſhip and truſt, by the ſcandalous ſcheme in which he had embarked; and that his treacherous flight from his ſecurity was no proof of his honeſty and intended return; but on the contrary, a warning by which he (the lender) was taught to take care of himſelf. He therefore inſiſted upon his being indemnified immediately, on pain of letting the law take it's courſe; and Peregrine was actually obliged to part with the whole ſum he had ſo lately received. But this payment was not made without extreme reluctance, indignation, and denunciation of eternal war againſt the abſconder and the rigid creditor, betwixt whom he ſuſpected ſome colluſion.

CHAP. VI.

Cadwallader acts the Part of a Comforter to his Friend, and in his Turn is conſoled by Peregrine, who begins to find himſelf a moſt egregious Dupe.

THIS new misfortune, which he juſtly charged to the account of his own folly, recalled his chagrin; and though he endeavoured with all his might to conceal the affair from the knowledge of Cadwallader, that prying obſerver perceived his countenance overcaſt. The projector's ſudden diſappearance alarming his ſuſpicion, he managed his enquiries with ſo much art, that in a few days he made himſelf acquainted with every particular of the tranſaction, and reſolved to gratify his ſpleen at the expence of the impatient dupe. With this view, he took an opportunity to accoſt him with

with a very ſerious air, ſaying, a friend of his had immediate occaſion for a thouſand pounds, and as Peregrine had the exact ſum lying by him, he would take it as a great favour, if he would part with it for a few months on undoubted ſecurity. Had Pickle known the true motive of this demand, he would in all likelihood have made a very diſagreeable anſwer; but Crabtree had wrapt himſelf up ſo ſecurely in the diſſimulation of his features, that the youth could not poſſibly penetrate into his intention; and in the moſt galling ſuſpence replied, that the money was otherwiſe engaged. The miſanthrope, not contented with this irritation, aſſumed the prerogative of a friend, and queſtioned him ſo minutely about the diſpoſal of the caſh, that after numberleſs evaſions, which coſt him a world of torture to invent, he could contain his vexation no longer, but exclaimed in a rage, 'Damn your impertinence! 'tis gone to the devil, and that's enough!'—'Thereafter as it may be,' ſaid the tormentor, with a moſt provoking indifference of aſpect, 'I ſhould be glad to know upon what footing; for I ſuppoſe you have ſome expectation of advantage from that quarter.'—''Sdeath, Sir!' cried the impatient youth, 'if I had any expectation from hell, I would make intereſt with you, for I believe from my ſoul, you are one of it's moſt favoured miniſters upon earth.' With theſe words, he flung out of the room, leaving Cadwallader very well ſatisfied with the chaſtiſement he had beſtowed.

Peregrine having cooled himſelf with a ſolitary walk in the Park, during which the violence of his choler gradually evaporated, and his reflection was called to a ſerious deliberation upon the poſture of his affairs, he reſolved to redouble his diligence and importunity with his patron and the miniſter, in order to obtain ſome ſinecure, which would indemnify him for the damage he had ſuſtained on their account. He accordingly went to his lordſhip, and ſignified his demand, after having told him, that he had ſuffered ſeveral freſh

loſſes

losses, which rendered an immediate provision of that sort necessary to his credit and subsistence.

His noble friend commended him for the regard he manifested for his own interest, which he considered as a proof of his being at last detached from the careless inadvertency of youth; he approved of his demand, which he assured him should be faithfully transmitted to the minister, and backed with all his influence; and encouraged his hope, by observing, that some profitable places were at that time vacant, and, so far as he knew, unengaged.

This conversation helped to restore the tranquillity of Pickle's breast, though he still harboured resentment against Cadwallader, on account of the last insult; and on the instant he formed a plan of revenge. He knew the misanthrope's remittances from his estate in the country had been of late very scanty, in consequence of repairs and bankruptcies among his tenants: so that, in spite of all his frugality, he had been but barely able to maintain his credit, and even that was engaged on the strength of his running-rent. Being therefore intimately acquainted with the particulars of his fortune, he wrote a letter to Crabtree, subscribed with the name of his principal farmer's wife, importing, that her husband being lately dead, and the greatest part of her cattle destroyed by the infectious distemper, she found herself utterly incapable of paying the rent which was due, or even of keeping the farm, unless he would, out of his great goodness, be pleased to give her some assistance, and allow her to sit free for a twelvemonth to come. This intimation he found means to convey by post from a market-town adjoining to the farm, directed in the usual style to the cynick, who seeing it stamped with the known marks, could not possibly suspect any imposition.

Hacknied as he was in the ways of life, and steeled with his boasted stoicism, this epistle threw him into such an agony of vexation, that a double proportion of louring was visible in his aspect, when he was visited
by

by the author, who having obſerved and followed the poſtman at a proper diſtance, introduced a converſation upon his own diſappointments, in which, among other circumſtances of his own ill luck, he told him, that his patron's ſteward had deſired to be excuſed from paying the laſt quarter of his intereſt preciſely at the appointed term; for which reaſon, he ſhould be utterly void of caſh; and therefore requeſted that Crabtree would accommodate him with an hundred pieces out of his next remittance from the country.

This demand galled and perplexed the old man to ſuch a degree, that the muſcles of his face aſſumed a contraction peculiarly virulent, and exhibited the character of Diogenes with a moſt lively expreſſion; he knew that a confeſſion of his true ſituation would furniſh Pickle with an opportunity to make repriſals upon him, with intolerable triumph; and that, by a downright refuſal to ſupply his wants, he would for ever forfeit his friendſhip and eſteem, and might provoke him to take ample vengeance for his ſordid behaviour, by expoſing him, in his native colours, to the reſentment of thoſe whom he had ſo long deceived. Theſe conſiderations kept him ſome time in a moſt rancorous ſtate of ſuſpence; which Peregrine affected to miſinterpret, by bidding him freely declare his ſuſpicion, if he did not think it ſafe to comply with his requeſt, and he would make ſhift elſewhere.

This ſeeming miſconſtruction increaſed the torture of the miſanthrope, who with the utmoſt irritation of feature, 'Oons!' cried he, 'what villainy have you noted in my conduct, that you treat me like a raſcally uſurer?' Peregrine very gravely replied, that the queſtion needed no anſwer; 'for,' ſaid he, 'had I conſidered you as an uſurer, I would have come with a ſecurity under my arm: but, all evaſion apart, will you ſtead me? will you pleaſure me? ſhall I have the money?'—'Would it were in your belly, with a barrel of gun-powder!' exclaimed the enraged cynick; 'ſince I muſt be excruciated, read that palguy paper!—'Sblood! why didn't

nature

nature clap a pair of long ears and a tail upon me, that I might be a real aſs, and champ thiſtles on ſome common independent of my fellow-creatures? Would I were a worm, that I might creep into the earth, and thatch my habitation with a ſingle ſtraw; or rather a waſp or a viper, that I might make the raſcally world feel my reſentment. But why do I talk of raſcality? folly, folly, is the ſcourge of life! Give me a ſcoundrel, (ſo he be a ſenſible one) and I will put him in my heart of hearts! but a fool is more miſchievous than famine, peſtilence, and war. The idiotical hag that writes or cauſes to be writ, this ſame letter, has ruined her family, and broke her huſband's heart, by ignorance and miſmanagement; and ſhe imputes her calamity to Providence with a vengeance; and ſo I am defrauded of three hundred pounds, the greateſt part of which I owe to tradeſmen whom I have promiſed to pay this very quarter. Pox upon her! I would ſhe were an horned beaſt, that the diſtemper might lay hold on her. The beldame has the impudence, too, (after ſhe has brought me into this dilemma) to ſolicit my aſſiſtance to ſtock the farm anew! Before God, I have a good mind to ſend her an halter; and perhaps I might purchaſe another for myſelf, but that I would not furniſh food for laughter to knaves and coxcombs!"

Peregrine having peruſed the billet, and liſtened to this ejaculation, replied with great compoſure, that he was aſhamed to ſee a man of his years and pretenſions to philoſophy ſo ruffled by a trifle. 'What ſignify all the boaſted hardſhips you have overcome,' ſaid he, 'and the ſhrewd obſervations you pretend to have made on human nature? Where is that ſtoical indifference you affirm you have attained, when ſuch a paltry diſappointment can diſturb you in this manner? What is the loſs of three hundred pounds, compared with the misfortunes which I myſelf have undergone within theſe two years? Yet you will take upon you to act the cenſor, and inveigh againſt the impatience and impetuoſity of youth, as if you yourſelf had gained an abſolute con-

quest over all the passions of the heart. You was so kind as to insult me t'other day in my affliction, by reproaching me with indiscretion and misconduct; suppose I were now to retort the imputation, and ask how a man of your profound sagacity could leave your fortune at the discretion of ignorant peasants? How could you be so blind as not to foresee the necessity of repairs, together with the danger of bankruptcy, murrain, or thin crop? Why did not you convert your land into ready-money, and (as you have no connections in life) purchase an annuity, on which you might have lived at your ease, without any fear of the consequence? Can't you, from the whole budget of your philosophy, call one apophthegm to console you for this trivial mischance?'

'Rot your rapidity!' said the cynick, half choaked with gall; 'if the cancer or the pox were in your throat, I should not be thus tormented with your tongue: and yet a magpye shall speak infinitely more to the purpose! Don't you know, Mr. Wiseacre, that my case does not fall within the province of philosophy? Had I been curtailed of all members, racked by the gout and gravel, deprived of liberty, robbed of an only child, or visited with the death of a dear friend like you, philosophy might have contributed to my consolation; but will philosophy pay my debts, or free me from the burden of obligation to a set of fellows whom I despise? Speak!—pronounce—demonstrate—or may Heaven close your mouth for ever!'

'These are the comfortable fruits of your misanthropy,' answered the youth; 'your laudable scheme of detaching yourself from the bonds of society, and of moving in a superior sphere of your own. Had not you been so peculiarly sage, and intent upon laughing at mankind, you could never have been disconcerted by such a pitiful inconvenience: any friend would have accommodated you with the sum in question. But now the world may retort the laugh; for you stand upon such an agreeable footing with your acquaintance, that

nothing

nothing could pleaſe them better than an account of your having given diſappointment the ſlip, by the help of a nooſe properly applied. This I mention by way of hint, upon which I would have you chew the cud of reflection; and ſhould it come to that iſſue, I will uſe my whole intereſt with the coroner to bring in his verdict *Lunacy*, that your carcaſe may have Chriſtian burial.'

So ſaying, he withdrew, very well ſatisfied with the revenge he had taken; which operated ſo violently upon Crabtree, that if it had not been for the ſole conſideration mentioned above, he would, in all probability, have had recourſe to the remedy propoſed. But his unwillingneſs to oblige and entertain his fellow-creatures, hindered him from practiſing that expedient, till, by courſe of poſt, he was happily undeceived with regard to the ſituation of his affairs; and that information had ſuch an effect upon him, that he not only forgave our hero for the ſtratagem, which he immediately aſcribed to the right author, but alſo made him a tender of his purſe; ſo that matters, for the preſent, were brought to an amicable accommodation.

Meanwhile, Peregrine never ſlacked in his attendance upon the great; he never omitted to appear upon every levee day, employed his induſtry and penetration in getting intelligence of poſts that were unfilled, and every day recommended himſelf to the good offices of his patron, who ſeemed to eſpouſe his intereſt with great cordiality: nevertheleſs, he was always too late in his application, or the place he demanded chanced to be out of the miniſter's gift.

Theſe intimations, though communicated in the moſt warm profeſſions of friendſhip and regard, gave great umbrage to the young gentleman, who conſidered them as the evaſions of an inſincere courtier, and loudly complained of them as ſuch to his lordſhip, ſignifying, at the ſame time, an intention to ſell his mortgage for ready-money, which he would expend to the laſt farthing in thwarting his honour in the very firſt election

he ſhould patronize. His lordſhip never wanted a proper exhortation upon theſe occaſions: he did not now endeavour to pacify him with aſſurances of the miniſter's favour, becauſe he perceived that theſe medicines had, by repeated uſe, loſt their effect upon our adventurer, whoſe menaces he now combated, by repreſenting that the miniſter's purſe was heavier than that of Mr. Pickle: that therefore, ſhould he make a point of oppoſing his intereſt, the youth muſt infallibly fail in the conteſt; in which caſe he would find himſelf utterly deſtitute of the means of ſubſiſtence, and conſequently precluded from all hope of proviſion.

This was an obſervation, the truth of which our young gentleman could not pretend to doubt, though it did not at all tend to the vindication of his honour's conduct. Indeed, Pickle began to ſuſpect the ſincerity of his own patron, who, in his opinion, had trifled with his impatience, and even eluded, by ſorry excuſes, his deſire of having another private audience of the firſt mover. His lordſhip alſo began to be leſs acceſſible than uſual; and Peregrine had been obliged to dun the ſteward with repeated demands, before he could finger the laſt quarter of his intereſt.

Alarmed by theſe conſiderations, he went and conſulted the nobleman whom he had obliged in the affair of his ſon; and had the mortification to hear but a very indifferent character of the perſon in whom he had ſo long confided. This new adviſer, who (though a courtier) was a rival of the other, gave our adventurer to underſtand, that he had been lean'ng upon a broken reed, that his profeſſed patron was a man of a ſhattered fortune and decayed intereſt, which extended no farther than a ſmile and a whiſper; that, for his own part, he ſhould have been proud of an opportunity to uſe his influence with the miniſter in behalf of Mr. Pickle: "But, ſince you have put yourſelf under the protection of another peer," ſaid he, "whoſe connections interfere with mine, I cannot now eſpouſe your cauſe, without incurring the imputation of ſeducing that no-

bleman's adherents; a charge which, of all others I would most carefully avoid. However, I shall always be ready to assist you with my private advice; as a specimen of which, I now counsel you to insist upon having another interview with Sir Steady Steerwell himself, that you may in person explain your pretensions, without any risk of being misrepresented; and endeavour, if possible, to draw him into some particular promise, from which he cannot retract with any regard to his reputation: for general profession is a necessary armour worn by all ministers in their own defence, against the importunity of those whom they will not befriend, and would not disoblige."

This advice was so conformable to his own sentiments, that our adventurer seized the first opportunity to demand an hearing; and plainly told his patron, that if he could not be indulged with that favour, he should look upon his lordship's influence to be very small, and his own hopes to be altogether desperate; in which case, he was resolved to dispose of the mortgage, purchase an annuity, and live independent.

CHAP. VII.

He is indulged with a second Audience by the Minister, of whose Sincerity he is convinced. His pride and Ambition revive, and again are mortified.

IF the young gentleman's money had been in other hands, perhaps the peer would have been at very little pains, either in gratifying his demand, or opposing his revenge; but he knew that the sale of the mortgage could not be effected without an enquiry, to which he did not wish to be exposed. He therefore employed all his interest in procuring the solicited audience. This being granted, Peregrine with great warmth and elocution, expatiated upon the injury his fortune had suffered in the affair of the borough for which he had stood candidate; he took notice of the disappointment he had sustained in the other election, reminded him of the promises with which he had been amused, and

in

in conclusion, desired to know what he had to expect from his favour.

The minister having patiently heard him to an end, replied with a most gracious aspect, that he was very well informed of his merit and attachment, and very much deference he paid to both; that, till of late, he did not know the nature of his expectations, neither had he the power of creating posts for those whom he was inclined to serve; but if Mr. Pickle would chalk out any feasible method, by which he could manifest his sentiments of friendship, he should not be backward in executing the plan.

Peregrine laying hold on this declaration, mentioned several places which he knew to be vacant: but the old evasion was still used: one of them was not in his department of business; another had been promised to the third son of a certain earl, before the death of the last possessor; and a third was incumbered with a pension which ate up a good half of the appointments. In short such obstructions were started to all his proposals, as he could not possibly surmount; though he plainly perceived, they were no other than specious pretexts to cover the mortifying side of a refusal. Exasperated, therefore, at this lack of sincerity and gratitude, "I can easily foresee," said he, "that such difficulties will never be wanting, when I have any thing to ask; and for that reason will save myself the trouble of any farther application." So saying, he withdrew in a very abrupt manner, breathing defiance and revenge. But his patron, who did not think proper to drive him to extremities, found means to persuade his honour to do something for the pacification of the young man's choler: and that same evening our adventurer received a message from his lordship, desiring to see him immediately.

In consequence of this intimation, Pickle went to his house, and appeared before him with a very cloudy aspect, which signified to whom it might concern, that his temper was at present too much galled to endure

reproof: and therefore the ſagacious peer forebore taking him to taſk for his behaviour during the audience he had obtained; but gave him to underſtand, that the miniſter, in conſideration of his ſervices, had ſent him a bank-note of three hundred pounds, with a promiſe of the like ſum yearly, until he could be otherwiſe provided for. This declaration in ſome meaſure appeaſed the youth, who condeſcended to accept the preſent; and next levee-day made his acknowledgment to the donor, who favoured him with a ſmile of infinite complacency, which entirely diſſipated all the remains of his reſentment; for, as he could not poſſibly divine the true cauſe of his being temporized with, he looked upon this condeſcenſion as an undoubted proof of Sir Steady's ſincerity, and firmly believed that he would ſettle him in ſome place with the firſt opportunity, rather than continue to pay his penſion out of his own pocket. In all probability, his prediction would have been verified, had not an unforeſeen accident in a moment overwhelmed the bark of his intereſt at court.

Meanwhile, this ſhort gleam of good fortune recalled the ideas of pride and ambition, which he had formerly cheriſhed. His countenance was again lifted up, his good humour retrieved, and his mien re-exalted. Indeed, he began to be conſidered as a riſing man by his fellow-dependents, who ſaw the particular notice with which he was favoured at the publick levee; and ſome of them, for that reaſon, were at pains to court his good graces. He no longer ſhunned his former intimates, with whom a good part of his fortune had been ſpent, but made up to them in all places of publick reſort, with the ſame eaſe and familiarity as he had been uſed to expreſs, and even re-embarked in ſome of their exceſſes, upon the ſtrength of his ſanguine expectation. Cadwallader and he renewed their conſultations in the court of ridicule; and divers exploits were atchieved, to the confuſion of thoſe who had *failed into the North of their diſpleaſure*.

But their enjoyments were ſoon interrupted by a misfortune

fortune equally fatal and unexpected: his noble patron was seized with an apoplectick fit, from which he was recovered by the physicians, that they might dispatch him according to rule; and, in two months after they were called, he went the way of all flesh. Peregrine was very much afflicted at this event, not only on account of his friendship for the deceased, to whom he thought himself under many and great obligations, but also, because he feared that his own interest would suffer a severe shock, by the removal of this nobleman, whom he considered as it's chief support. He put himself therefore in mourning, out of regard to the memory of his departed friend, and exhibited genuine marks of sorrow and concern; though he had, in reality, more cause to grieve than he as yet imagined.

When quarter day came about, he applied to the steward of his lordship's heir for the interest of his money as usual; and the reader will readily own had some reason to be surprized, when he was told he had no claim either to principal or interest. True it is, the manager talked very civilly as well as sensibly upon the subject. "Your appearance, Sir," said he to Pickle, "screens you from all suspicion of an intended fraud; but the mortgage upon those lands you mention, was granted to another person many years before you pretend to have lent that sum; and I have this very morning paid one quarter's interest, as appears from this receipt, which you may peruse for your satisfaction."

Peregrine was so thunder struck at this information, which stripped him of his all, that he could not utter one word; a circumstance that did no great honour to his character, in the opinion of the steward; who, in good earnest, began to entertain some doubts of his integrity: for, among the papers of the deceased, which he had examined, there was no writing, memorandum, or receipt, relating to this incumbrance. After a long pause of stupefaction, Peregrine recollected himself so far as to observe, that either he was egregiously mistaken, or the predecessor of his lord had

villain upon earth. "But, Mr. What-d'ye-call-um," ſaid he, "you muſt give me leave to tell you, that your bare aſſertion, in this affair, will by no means induce me to put up quietly with the loſs of ten thouſand pounds."

Having thus expreſſed himſelf, he retired from the houſe ſo diſcontented at this demur, that he ſcarce knew whether he moved upon his head or heels; and the Park chancing to lie in his way, he ſauntered about, giving vent to a ſoliloquy in praiſe of his departed friend, the burden of which was a ſtring of incoherent curſes imprecated upon himſelf; till his tranſports, by degrees giving way to his reflection, he deliberated ſeriouſly and ſorrowfully upon his misfortune, and reſolved to conſult lawyers without loſs of time. But, firſt of all, he propoſed to make perſonal application to the heir; who, by a candid repreſentation of the caſe, might be inclined to do him juſtice.

In conſequence of this determination, he next morning put his writings in his pocket, and went in a chair to the houſe of the young nobleman, to whom being admitted by virtue of his appearance, and a ſmall gratification to the porter, he explained the whole affair, corroborating his aſſertions with the papers which he produced, and deſcribing the diſgrace that would be entailed upon the memory of the deceaſed, ſhould he be obliged to ſeek redreſs in a public court of juſtice.

The executor, who was a perſon of good-breeding, condoled him upon his loſs with great good-nature, though he did not ſeem much ſurprized at his account of the matter; but wiſhed that, ſince the fraud muſt have been commited, the damage had fallen upon the firſt mortgager, who (he ſaid) was a thieviſh uſurer, grown rich by the diſtreſſes of his fellow-creatures. In anſwer to our hero's remonſtrances, he obſerved, that he did not look upon himſelf as obliged to pay the leaſt regard to the character of his predeceſſor, who had uſed him with great barbarity and injuſtice, not only in excluding him from his countenance and aſſiſtance, but alſo in prejudicing his inheritance as much as lay in his

power;

power; ſo that it could not be reaſonably expected that he would pay ten thouſand pounds of his debt, for which he had received no value. Peregrine, in ſpite of his chagrin, could not help owning within himſelf, that there was a good deal of reaſon in this refuſal. After having given looſe to his indignation, in the moſt violent invectives againſt the defunct, he took his leave of the complaiſant heir, and had immediate recourſe to the advice of counſel, who aſſured him, that he had an excellent plea, and was accordingly retained in the cauſe.

All theſe meaſures were taken in the firſt vigour of his exertion, during which his ſpirits were ſo fluſtered with the diverſity of paſſions produced by his miſchance, that he miſtook for equanimity that which was no other than intoxication; and two whole days elapſed before he attained a due ſenſe of his misfortune. Then, indeed, he underwent a woeful ſelf-examination; every circumſtance of the enquiry added freſh pangs to his reflection; and the reſult of the whole was a diſcovery, that his fortune was totally conſumed, and himſelf reduced to a ſtate of the moſt deplorable dependence. This ſuggeſtion alone might (in the anguiſh of his deſpondency) have driven him to ſome deſperate courſe, had not it been in ſome meaſure qualified by the confidence of his lawyers, and the aſſurance of the miniſter, which (ſlender as the world hath generally found them) were the only bulwarks between miſery and him.

The mind is naturally pliable, and, provided it has the leaſt hope to lean upon, adapts itſelf wonderfully to the emergencies of fortune, eſpecially when the imagination is gay and luxuriant. This was the caſe with our adventurer; inſtead of indulging the melancholy ideas which his loſs inſpired, he had recourſe to the flattering deluſions of hope, ſoothing himſelf with unſubſtantial plans of future greatneſs, and endeavouring to cover what was paſſed with the veil of oblivion.

After ſome heſitation, he reſolved to make Crabtree acquainted

acquainted with his misfortune, that once for all he might paſs the ordeal of his ſatire, without ſubjecting himſelf to a long ſeries of ſarcaſtick hints and doubtful alluſions, which he could not endure. He accordingly took the firſt opportunity of telling him, that he was abſolutely ruined by the perfidy of his patron, and deſired that he would not aggravate his affliction, by thoſe cynical remarks which were peculiar to men of his miſanthropical diſpoſition. Cadwallader liſtened to this declaration with internal ſurprize; which, however, produced no alteration in his countenance; and after ſome pauſe, obſerved, that our hero had no reaſon to look for any new obſervation from him upon this event, which he had long foreſeen, and daily expected; and exhorted him, with an ironical ſneer, to conſole himſelf with the promiſe of the miniſter, who would doubtleſs diſcharge the debts of his deceaſed boſom friend.

CHAP. VIII.

Peregrine commits himſelf to the Publick, and is admitted Member of a College of Authors.

THE bitterneſs of this explanation being paſſed, our young gentleman began to revolve within himſelf ſchemes for making up the deficiencies of his yearly income, which was now ſo grievouſly reduced; and determined to profit, in ſome ſhape or other, by thoſe talents which he owed to nature and education. He had, in his affluence, heard of ſeveral authors who, without any pretenſions to genius, or human literature, earned a very genteel ſubſiſtence, by undertaking work for bookſellers, in which reputation was not all concerned. One (for example) profeſſed all manner of tranſlation, at ſo much per ſheet, and actually kept five or ſix amanuenſes continually employed, like ſo many clerks in a compting-houſe; by which means he was enabled to live at his eaſe, and enjoy his friend and his bottle, ambitious of no other character than that of an honeſt man and a good neighbour. Another projected a variety of plans for new dictionaries, which were executed under his eye by day-labourers; and the province of

a third

a third was hiſtory and voyages, collected or abriged by underſtrappers of the ſame claſs.

Mr. Pickle, in his compariſons, paid ſuch deference to his own capacity, as baniſhed all doubts of his being able to excel any of thoſe undertakers in their different branches of profeſſion, if ever he ſhould be driven to that experiment: but his ambition prompted him to make his intereſt and glory coincide, by attempting ſome performance which ſhould do him honour with the publick, and at the ſame time eſtabliſh his importance among the copy-purchaſers in town. With this view he worſhipped the muſe; and, conſcious of the little regard which is, in this age, paid to every ſpecies of poetick compoſition, in which neither ſatire nor obſcenity occurs, he produced an imitation of Juvenal, and laſhed ſome conſpicuous characters, with equal truth, ſpirit, and ſeverity. Though his name did not appear in the title-page of this production, he managed matters ſo, as that the work was univerſally imputed to the true author, who was not altogether diſappointed in his expectations of ſucceſs; for the impreſſion was immediately ſold off, and the piece became the ſubject of converſation in all aſſemblies of taſte.

This happy exordium not only attracted the addreſſes of the bookſellers, who made intereſt for his acquaintance, but alſo rouzed the notice of a ſociety of authors, who ſtyled themſelves *the college*, from which he was honoured with a deputation, offering to enrol him a member, by unanimous conſent. The perſon employed for this purpoſe being a bard who had formerly taſted of our hero's bounty, uſed all his eloquence to perſuade him to comply with the advances of their fraternity, which he deſcribed in ſuch a manner, as inflamed the curioſity of Pickle, who diſmiſſed the ambaſſador with an acknowledgment of the great honour they had conferred upon him, and a faithful promiſe of endeavouring to merit the countenance of their approbation.

He was afterwards, by the ſame miniſter inſtructed

in the ceremonies of the college; and, in consequence of his information, composed an Ode, to be publickly recited on the evening of his introduction. He understood that this constitution was no other than a body of authors, incorporated by mutual consent, for their joint advantage and satisfaction, opposed to another assembly of the same kind, their avowed enemies and detractors. No wonder, then, that they sought to strengthen themselves, with such a valuable acquisition as our hero was like to prove. The college consisted of authors only, and these of all degrees in point of reputation, from the fabricator of a song set to musick and sung at Marybone, to the dramatick bard who had appeared in buskins upon the stage: nay, one of the members had actually finished eight books of an epick poem, for the publication of which he was at that time soliciting subscriptions.

It cannot be supposed that such a congregation of the sons of Apollo would sit a whole evening with order and decorum, unless they were under the check of some established authority: and this inconvenience having been foreseen, they had elected a president, vested with full powers to silence any member or members, that should attempt to disturb the harmony and subordination of the whole. The sage who at this time possessed the chair, was a person in years, whose countenance was a lively portrait of that rancorous discontent which follows repeated damnation. He had been extremely unfortunate in his theatrical productions, and was (to use the words of a profane wag, who assisted at the condemnation of his last play) by this time *damned beyond redemption*. Nevertheless, he still tarried about the skirts of Parnassus, translating some of the classicks, and writing miscellanies; and, by dint of an invincible assurance, supercilious insolence, the most undaunted virulence of tongue, and some knowledge of life, he made shift to acquire and maintain the character of a man of learning and wit, in the opinion of people who had neither; that is, thirty-nine in forty of

of those with whom he associated himself. He was even looked upon in this light by some few of the college; though the major part of those who favoured his election were such as dreaded his malice, respected his experience and seniority, or hated his competitor, who was the epick poet.

The chief end of this society (as I have already hinted) was to assist and support each other in their productions, which they mutually recommended to sale, with all their art and influence, not only in private conversation, but also in occasional epigrams, criticisms, and advertisements, inserted in the publick papers. This science, which is known by the vulgar appellation of *puffing*, they carried to such a pitch of finesse, that an author very often wrote an abusive answer to his own performance, in order to inflame the curiosity of the town, by which it had been overlooked. Notwithstanding this general unanimity in the college, a private animosity had long subsisted between the two rivals I have mentioned, on account of precedence, to which both laid claim, though by a majority of voices it had been decided in favour of the present chairman. The grudge, indeed, never proceeded to any degree of outrage or defiance, but manifested itself at every meeting, in attempts to eclipse each other in smart sayings and pregnant repartee: so that there was always a delicate mess of this kind of wit served up in the front of the evening, for the entertainment and example of the junior members, who never failed to divide upon this occasion, declaring themselves for one or other of the combatants, whom they encouraged by their looks, gestures, and applause, according to the circumstances of the dispute.

This honourable consistory was held in the best room of an ale-house, which afforded wine, punch, or beer, suitable to the purse or inclination of every individual, who separately paid for his own choice: and here was our hero introduced, in the midst of twenty strangers, who, by their looks and equipage, formed a very picturesque

tureſque variety. He was received with a moſt gra-cious ſolemnity, and placed upon the right-hand of th preſident, who having commanded ſilence, recited alou his introductory Ode, which met with univerſal appro-bation. Then was tendered to him the cuſtomar oath, obliging him to conſult the honour and advan-tage of the ſociety as far as it ſhould lie in his power in every ſtation of life; and this being taken, hi temples were bound with a wreath of laurel, which wa kept ſacred for ſuch inauguration.

When theſe rites were performed with all due cere mony, the new member caſt his eyes around the plac and took a more accurate ſurvey of his brethren among whom he obſerved a ſtrange collection of pe wigs, with regard to the colour, faſhions, and dime ſions, which were ſuch as he had never ſeen befor Thoſe who ſat on each ſide, neareſt the preſident, we generally diſtinguiſhed by venerable tyes, the fore-to of which exhibited a ſurprizing diverſity; ſome o them roſe ſlanting backwards, like the glacis of a forti-fication; ſome were elevated on two diſtinct eminence like the hills of Helicon and Parnaſſus; and other were curled and reflected, as the horns of Jupit Ammon. Next to theſe, the majors took place, ma of which were mere *ſuccedanea*, made by the applic tion of an occaſional roſe to the tail of a lank bo and in the lower form appeared maſſes of hair whi would admit of no deſcription.

Their cloaths were tolerably well ſuited to the fu niture of their heads, the apparel of the upper-ben being decent and clean, while that of the ſecond cl was threadbare and ſoiled; and at the lower end of t room, he perceived divers efforts made to conceal th rent breeches and dirty linen: nay, he could diſtingui by their countenances, the different kinds of poetry which they exerciſed the muſe; he ſaw Tragedy co ſpicuous in a grave ſolemnity of regard; Satire lourin in a frown of envy and diſcontent; Elegy whining a funeral aſpect; Paſtoral dozing in a moſt inſip

languor

languor of face; Ode-writing delineated in a diſtracted ſtare; and Epigram ſquinting with a pert ſneer. Perhaps our hero refined too much in his penetration, when he affirmed, that over and above theſe diſcoveries, he could plainly perceive the ſtate of every one's finances, and would have undertaken to have gueſſed each particular ſum, without varying three farthings from the truth.

The converſation, inſtead of becoming general, began to fall into parties: and the epick poet had actually attracted the attention of a private committee, when the chairman interpoſed, calling aloud, "No cabals! no conſpiracies, gentlemen!" His rival thinking it incumbent upon him to make ſome reply to this rebuke, anſwered, "We have no ſecrets; he that hath ears, let him hear." This was ſpoken as an intimation to the company, whoſe looks were inſtantly whetted with the expectation of their ordinary meal; but the preſident ſeemed to decline the conteſt; for, without putting on his fighting face, he calmly replied, that he had ſeen Mr. Metaphor tip the wink, and whiſper to one of his confederates, and thence judged that there was ſomething myſterious on the carpet.

The epick poet, believing his antagoniſt creſt-fallen, reſolved to take the advantage of his dejection, that he might enhance his own character in the opinion of the ſtranger; and with that view aſked, with an air of exultation, if a man might not be allowed to have a convulſion in his eye, without being ſuſpected of a conſpiracy. The preſident perceiving his drift, and piqued at his preſumption, "To be ſure," ſaid he, "a man of a weak head may be very well ſuppoſed to have convulſions in his eyes." This repartee produced a laugh of triumph among the chairman's adherents; one of whom obſerved, that his rival had got a ſmart rap on the pate. "Yes," replied the bard, "in that reſpect Mr. Chairman has the advantage of me. Had my head been fortified with a horn work, I ſhould not have been ſo ſenſible of the ſtroke." This retort, which

carried a severe allusion to the president's wife, lighted up the countenances of the aggressor's friends, which had begun to be a little obumbrated; and had a contrary effect upon the other faction, till their chief, collecting all his capacity, returned the salute, by observing, that there was no occasion for an horn-work, when the covered-way was not worth defending.

Such a reprisal upon Mr. Metaphor's yoke-fellow, who was by no means remarkable for her beauty, could not fail to operate upon the hearers; and as for the bard himself, he was evidently ruffled by the reflection; to which however he, without hesitation, replied, "Egad! 'tis my opinion, that if your covered-way was laid open, few people would venture to give the assault."—"Not unless their batteries were more effectual than the fire of your wit," said the president. "As for that matter," cried the other with precipitation, "they would have no occasion to batter in breach; they would find the angle of the *lapucelle* bastion demolished to their hands: He! he!"—"But I believe it would surpass your understanding," resumed the chairman, "to fill up the *fossé*."—"That, I own, is impracticable," replied the bard, "there I should meet with an *hiatus maxime deflendus!*"

The president, exasperated at this insinuation, in presence of the new member, exclaimed with indignation in his looks, "And yet, if a body of pioneers were set at work upon your skull, they would find rubbish enough to choak up all the common-sewers in town." Here a groan was uttered by the admirers of the epick poet; who, taking a pinch of snuff with great composure, "When a man grows scurrilous," said he, "I take it for an undoubted proof of his overthrow."—"If that be the case," cried the other, "you yourself must be the vanquished party; for you was the first that was driven to personal abuse."—"I appeal," answered the bard, "to those who can distinguish. Gentlemen, your judgment?"

This reference produced an universal clamour, and the

the whole college was involved in confusion. Every man entered into dispute with his neighbour on the merits of this cause. The chairman interposed authority in vain; the noise grew louder and louder; the disputants waxed warm; the epithets of *blockhead*, *fool*, and *scoundrel*, were bandied about. Peregrine enjoyed the uproar, and leaping upon the table, sounded the charge to battle, which was immediately commenced in ten different duels. The lights were extinguished; the combatants threshed one another without distinction; the mischievous Pickle distributed sundry random blows in the dark; and the people below, being alarmed with the sound of application, the overturning of chairs, and the outcries of those who were engaged, came up stairs in a body with lights, to reconnoitre, and, if possible, quell this hideous tumult.

Objects were no sooner rendered visible, than the field of battle exhibited strange groupes of the standing and the fallen. Each of Mr. Metaphor's eyes was surrounded with a circle of a livid hue; and the president's nose distilled a quantity of clotted blood. One of the tragick authors, finding himself assaulted in the dark, had, by way of a poniard, employed upon his adversary's throat a knife which lay upon the table, for the convenience of cutting cheese; but, by the blessing of God, the edge of it was not keen enough to enter the skin, which it had only scratched in divers places. A satyrist had almost bit off the ear of a lyrick bard. Shirts and neckloths were torn to rags; and there was such a woeful wreck of periwigs on the floor, that no examination could adjust the property of the owners, the greatest part of whom were obliged to use handkerchiefs by way of night-cap.

The fray, however, ceased at the approach of those who interposed; part of the combatants being tired of an exercise in which they had received nothing but hard blows; part of them being intimidated by the remonstrances of the landlord and his company, who

threatened to call the watch; and a very few bei[ng] aſhamed of the ſcandalous diſpute in which they we[re] detected. But though the battle was ended, it was impoſſible, for that evening, to reſtore harmony and good order to the ſociety, which broke up, after the preſident had pronounced a ſhort and confuſed apology to our adventurer, for the indecent uproar which had unfortunately happened on the firſt night of his admiſſion.

Indeed, Peregrine deliberated with himſelf, whether or not his reputation would allow him to appear again among this venerable fraternity; but, as he knew ſome of them to be men of real genius, how ridiculous ſoever their carriage might be modified, and was of that laughing diſpoſition, which is always ſeeking food for mirth, as Horace obſerves of Philippus,

Riſus undique quærit;

he reſolved to frequent the college, notwithſtanding this accident which happened at his inauguration; being thereto, moreover, induced by his deſire of knowing the private hiſtory of the ſtage, with which he ſuppoſed ſome of the members perfectly well acquainted. He was alſo viſited before the next meeting, by his introductor, who aſſured him, that ſuch a tumult had never happened ſince the firſt inſtitution of the aſſembly till that very night; and promiſed, that for the future he ſhould have no cauſe to be ſcandalized at their behaviour.

Perſuaded by theſe motives and aſſurances, he truſted himſelf once more in the midſt of their community, and every thing proceeded with great decorum; all diſputes and altercation was avoided; and the college applied itſelf ſeriouſly to the purpoſes of it's meeting, namely, to hear the grievances of individuals, and aſſiſt them with ſalutary advice. The firſt perſon that craved redreſs, was a noiſy North Briton, who complained (in a ſtrange dialect) that he had, in the beginning of the ſeaſon, preſented a comedy to the manager of a certain theatre;

tre; who, after it had lain six weeks in his hands, returned it to the author, affirming there was neither sense nor English in the performance.

The president (who, by the bye, had revised the piece) thinking his own reputation concerned, declared, in presence of the whole society, that with regard to sense, he would not undertake to vindicate the production; but, in point of language, no fault could be justly laid to it's charge: "The case, however, is very plain," said he; "the manager never gave himself the trouble to peruse the play, but formed a judgment of it from the conversation of the author, never dreaming that it had undergone the revisal of an English writer; be that as it will, you are infinitely obliged to him for having dispatched you so soon, and I shall have the better opinion of him for it as long as I live; for I have known otherguise authors than you (that is, in point of interest and fame) kept in continual attendance and dependence the best part of their lives, and after all, disappointed in the expectation of seeing their performances exhibited on the stage."

CHAP. IX.

Farther Proceedings of the College.

THIS affair was no sooner discussed, than another gentleman exhibited a complaint, signifying, that he had undertaken to translate into English a certain celebrated author, who had been cruelly mangled by former attempts; and that as soon as his design took air, the proprietors of the miserable translations had endeavoured to prejudice his work, by industrious insinuations, contrary to truth and fair-dealing, importing, that he did not understand one word of the language which he pretended to translate. This being a case that nearly concerned the greatest part of the audience, it was taken into serious deliberation: some observed, that it was not only a malicious effort against the plaintiff, but also a spiteful advertisement to the publick, tending to promote an enquiry into the abilities of all other translators, few of whom (it was well known)

were ſo qualified as to ſtand the teſt of this examination. Others ſaid, over and above this conſideration, which ought to have it's due weight with the college, there was a neceſſity for concerting meaſures to humble the preſumption of bookſellers; who had from time immemorial, taken all opportunities to oppreſs and enſlave their authors; not only by limiting men of genius to the wages of journeymen taylors, without even allowing them one ſabbath in the week, but alſo in taking ſuch advantages of their neceſſities, as were inconſiſtent with juſtice and humanity. "For example," ſaid one of the members, "after I myſelf had acquired a little reputation with the town, I was careſſed by one of thoſe tyrants, who profeſſed a friendſhip for me, and even ſupplied me with money, according to the exigencies of my ſituation; ſo that I looked upon him as the mirrour of diſintereſted benevolence; and had he known my diſpoſition, and treated me accordingly, I ſhould have writ for him upon his own terms. After I had uſed his friendſhip in this manner for ſome time, I happened to have occaſion for a ſmall ſum of money, and with great confidence made another application to my good friend; when all of a ſudden he put a ſtop to his generoſity, refuſed to accommodate me in the moſt abrupt and mortifying ſtyle, and though I was at that time pretty far advanced in a work for his benefit, which was a ſufficient ſecurity for what I owed him, he roundly aſked, how I propoſed to pay the money which I had already borrowed. Thus was I uſed like a young whore juſt come upon the town, whom the bawd allows to run into her debt, that ſhe may have it in her power to oppreſs her at pleaſure; and if the ſufferer complains, ſhe is treated like the moſt ungrateful wretch upon earth; and that too with ſuch appearance of reaſon, as may eaſily miſlead an unconcerned ſpectator. "You unthankful drab!" ſhe will ſay, "did'n't I take you into my houſe when you had'n't a ſhift to your back, a petticoat to your tail, nor a morſel of bread to put

into

into your belly? Ha'n't I cloathed you from head to foot like a gentlewoman; ſupported you with board, lodging, and all neceſſaries, till your own extravagance hath brought you into diſtreſs; and now you have the impudence, you naſty, ſtinking, brimſtone bung-away! to ſay you are hardly dealt with, when I demand no more than my own." Thus the whore and the author are equally oppreſſed, and even left without the melancholy privilege of complaining; ſo that they are fain to ſubſcribe to ſuch terms as their creditors ſhall pleaſe to impoſe."

This illuſtration operated ſo powerfully upon the conviction and reſentment of the whole college, that revenge was univerſally denounced againſt thoſe who had aggrieved the plaintiff; and after ſome debate it was agreed he ſhould make a new tranſlation of ſome other ſaleable book, in oppoſition to a former verſion belonging to the delinquents, and print it in ſuch a ſmall ſize, as would enable him to underſell their property; and that this new tranſlation ſhould be recommended and introduced into the world with the whole art and influence of the ſociety.

This affair being ſettled to the ſatisfaction of all preſent, an author of ſome character ſtood up, and craved the advice and aſſiſtance of his fellows, in puniſhing a certain nobleman of great pretenſions to taſte, who, in conſequence of a production which this gentleman had uſhered into the world with univerſal applauſe, not only deſired, but even eagerly courted his acquaintance. "He invited me to his houſe," ſaid he, "where I was overwhelmed with civility and profeſſions of friendſhip. He inſiſted upon my treating him as an intimate, and calling upon him at all hours, without ceremony; he made me promiſe to breakfaſt with him at leaſt three times a week: in ſhort, I looked upon myſelf as very fortunate, in meeting with ſuch advances from a man of his intereſt and reputation, who had it in his power to befriend me ſo effectually in my paſſage through life; and, that I might not give him any cauſe

to think I neglected his friendſhip, I went to his houſe in two days, with a view of drinking chocolate, according to appointment; but he had been ſo much fatigued with dancing at an aſſembly over night, that his valet de chambre would not venture to wake him ſo early; and I left my compliments to his lordſhip, with a performance in manuſcript, which he had expreſſed a moſt eager deſire to peruſe. I repeated my viſit next morning, that his impatience to ſee me might not have ſome violent effect upon his conſtitution; and received a meſſage from his miniſter, ſignifying that he had been highly entertained with the manuſcript I had left, a great part of which he had read, but was at preſent ſo buſy in contriving a proper dreſs for a private maſquerade, which would be given that ſame evening, that he could not have the pleaſure of my company at breakfaſt. This was a feaſible excuſe, which I admitted accordingly; and in a day or two appeared again, when his lordſhip was particularly engaged. This might poſſibly be the caſe; and therefore I returned the fourth time, in hopes of finding him more at leiſure; but he had gone out about half an hour before my arrival, and left my performance with his valet de chambre, who aſſured me that his lord had peruſed it with infinite pleaſure. Perhaps I might have retired very well ſatisfied with this declaration, had not I, in my paſſage through the hall, heard one of the footmen, upon the top of the ſtair-caſe, pronounce with an audible voice, "Will your lordſhip pleaſe to be at home when he calls?" It is not to be ſuppoſed that I was pleaſed at this diſcovery; which I no ſooner made, than turning to my conductor, "I find," ſaid I, "his lordſhip is diſpoſed to be abroad to more people than me this morning." The fellow (though a valet de chambre) bluſhed at this obſervation; and I withdrew, not a little irritated at the peer's diſingenuity, and fully reſolved to ſpare him my viſits for the future. It was not long after this occaſion, that I happened to meet him in the Park, and being naturally civil, I

could

could not pass him without a salutation of the hat, which he returned in the most distant manner, though we were both solitary, and not a soul within view; and when that very performance, which he had applauded so warmly, was lately published by subscription, he did not bespeak so much as one copy. I have often reflected with wonder upon this inconsistency in his conduct. I never courted his patronage, nor indeed thought of his name, until he made interest for my acquaintance; and if he was disappointed in my conversation, why did he press me so much to farther connection?"

"The case is very clear," cried the chairman, interrupting him: "he is one of those connoisseurs who set up for taste, and value themselves upon knowing all men of genius, whom they would be thought to assist in their productions. I will lay an even bet with any man, that his lordship, on the strength of that slender interview, together with the opportunity of having seen your performance in manuscript, has already hinted to every company in which he is conversant, that you solicited his assistance in retouching the piece, which you have offered to the publick, and that he was pleased to favour you with his advice, but found you obstinately bigotted to your own opinion, in some points relating to those very passages which have not met with the approbation of the town. As for his caresses, there was nothing at all extraordinary in his behaviour. By that time you have lived to my age, you will not be surprized to see a courtier's promise and performance of a different complexion; not but that I would willingly act as an auxiliary in your resentment."

The opinion of the president was strengthened by the concurrence of all the members; and all other complaints and memorials being deferred till another sitting, the college proceeded to an exercise of wit, which was generally performed once every fortnight, with a view to promote the expectoration of genius. The subject was occasionally chosen by the chairman, who

opened

opened the game with some shrewd remark naturally arising from the conversation; and then the ball was tossed about from one corner of the room to the other, according to the motions of the spirit.

That the reader may have a just idea of this sport, and of the abilities of those who carried it on, I shall repeat the sallies of this evening, according to the order and succession in which they escaped. One of the members observing that Mr. Metaphor was absent, was told by the person who sat next to him, that the poet had foul weather at home, and could not stir abroad. "What!" said the president interposing, with the signal upon his countenance, "is he wind-bound in port?"—"Wine-bound, I suppose," cried another.—"Hooped with wine! a strange metaphor!" said the third.—"Not if he has got into a hogshead," answered the fourth.—"The hogshead will sooner get into him," replied a fifth; "it must be a tun or an ocean."—"No wonder, then, if he should be overwhelmed," said a sixth.—"If he should," cried a seventh, "he will cast up when his gall breaks."—"That must be very soon," roared an eighth, "for it has been long ready to burst." —"No, no," observed a ninth, "he'll stick fast at the bottom, take my word for it; he has a *natural alacrity in sinking*."—"And yet," remarked a tenth, "I have seen him in the clouds."—"Then was he cloudy, I suppose," cried the eleventh.—"So dark," replied the other, "that his meaning could not be perceived."—"For all that," said the twelfth, "he is easily seen through."—"You talk," answered the thirteenth, "as if his head was made of glass."—"No, no," cried a fourteenth, "his head is made of more durable stuff; it will bend before it breaks."—"Yet I have seen it broken," resumed the president.—"Did you perceive any wit come out at the hole?" said another.—"His wit," replied the chairman, "is too subtle to be perceived."

A third mouth was just opened, when the exercise was suddenly interrupted by the dreadful cry of "Fire!" which issued from the kitchen, and involved the whole college

college in confuſion. Every man endeavouring to be the firſt in making his exiſt, the door and paſſage were blocked up: each individual was pummelled by the perſon that happened to be behind him. This communication produced noiſe and exclamation; clouds of ſmoke rolled upwards into the apartment, and terror ſat on every brow; when Peregrine, ſeeing no proſpect of retreating by the door, opened one of the windows, and fairly leaped into the ſtreet, where he found a crowd of people aſſembled to contribute their aſſiſtance in extinguiſhing the flames. Several members of the college followed his example, and happily accompliſhed their eſcape: the chairman himſelf being unwilling to uſe the ſame expedient, ſtood trembling on the brink of deſcent, dubious of his own agility, and dreading the conſequence of ſuch a leap, when a chair happening to paſs, he laid hold on the opportunity, and by an exertion of his muſcles pitched upon the top of the carriage, which was immediately over-turned in the kennel, to the grievous annoyance of the faire, which happened to be a certain effeminate beau, in full dreſs, on his way to a private aſſembly.

This phantom hearing the noiſe over head, and feeling the ſhock of being overthrown at the ſame time, thought that ſome whole tenement had fallen upon the chair, and, in the terror of being cruſhed to pieces, uttered a ſcream which the populace ſuppoſed to proceed from the mouth of a woman, and therefore went to his aſſiſtance; while the chairmen, inſtead of miniſtering to his occaſions, no ſooner recollected themſelves, than they run in purſuit of their overthrower, who being accuſtomed to eſcape from bailiffs, dived into a dark alley, and vaniſhing in a trice, was not viſible to any living ſoul, until he appeared next day on Tower Hill.

The humane part of the mob, who beſtirred themſelves for the relief of the ſuppoſed lady, no ſooner perceived their miſtake in the appearance of the beau, who ſtared around him with horror and affright, than

their compassion was changed into mirth, and they began to pass a great many unsavoury jokes upon his misfortune, which they now discovered no inclination to alleviate; and he found himself very uncomfortably beset, when Pickle, pitying his situation, interposed in his behalf, and prevailed upon the chairmen to carry him into the house of an apothecary in the neighbourhood, to whom his mischance proved a very advantageous accident; for the fright operated so violently upon his nerves, that he was seized with a delirium, and lay a whole fortnight deprived of his senses; during which period he was not neglected in point of medicines, food, and attendance, but royally regaled, as appeared by the contents of the landlord's bill.

Our adventurer having seen this unfortunate beau safely housed, returned to the scene of the other calamity: which, as it was no other than a foul chimney, soon yielded to the endeavours of the family, and was happily overcome, without any other bad consequence than that of alarming the neighbours, disturbing the college, and disordering the brain of a beau.

Eager to be acquainted with the particular constitutions of a society which seemed to open upon him by degrees, Mr. Pickle did not fail to appear at the next meeting, when several petitions were laid before the board, in behalf of those members who were confined in the prisons of the Fleet, Marshalsea, and King's Bench. As those unhappy authors expected nothing from their brethren but advice and good offices, which did not concern the purse, the memorials were considered with great care and humanity; and, upon this occasion, Peregrine had it in his power to manifest his importance to the community; for he happened to be acquainted with the creditor of one of the prisoners, and knew that gentleman's severity was owing to his resentment at the behaviour of the debtor, who had lampooned him in print, because he refused to comply with a fresh demand, after he had lent him money to the amount of a considerable sum. Our young gentleman

man therefore underſtanding that the author was penitent, and diſpoſed to make a reaſonable ſubmiſſion, promiſed to employ his influence with the creditor towards an accommodation; and in a few days actually obtained his releaſe.

The ſocial duties being diſcharged, the converſation took a general turn, and ſeveral new productions were freely criticiſed; thoſe eſpecially which belonged to authors who were either unconnected with, or unknown to the college. Nor did the profeſſion of ſtage-playing eſcape the cognizance of the aſſembly: a deputation of the moſt judicious members being ſent weekly to each theatre, with a view of making remarks upon the performance of the actors. The cenſors for the preceding week were accordingly called upon to give in their report; and the play which they had reviewed was the Revenge.

"Mr. Q—," ſaid the ſecond cenſor, "take him all in all, is certainly the moſt compleat and unblemiſhed performer that ever appeared on our ſtage, notwithſtanding the blind adoration which is paid to his rival. I went two nights ago, with an expreſs deſign to criticiſe his action: I could find no room for cenſure, but infinite ſubject for admiration and applauſe. In Pierre he is great, in Othello excellent, but in Zanga beyond all imitation. Over and above the diſtinctneſs of pronunciation, the dignity of attitude, and expreſſion of face, his geſtures are ſo juſt and ſignificant, that a man, though utterly bereft of the ſenſe of hearing, might, by ſeeing him only, underſtand the meaning of every word he ſpeaks. Sure nothing can be more exquiſite than his manner of telling Iſabella how Alonzo behaved when he found the incendiary letter which ſhe had dropped by the Moor's direction; and when, to crown his vengeance, he diſcovers himſelf to be the contriver of all the miſchief that had happened, he manifeſts a perfect maſter-piece of action, in pronouncing theſe four little monoſyllables, "*Know, then, 'twas——I.*"

Peregrine having eyed the critick ſome minutes—"I

fancy," said he, "your praise must be ironical, because in the very two situations you mention, I think I have seen that player out-herod Herod; or, in other words, exceed all his other extravagancies. The intention of the author is, that the Moor should communicate to his confidante a piece of information contained in a few lines; which, doubtless, ought to be repeated with an air of eagerness and satisfaction, not with the ridiculous grimace of a monkey, to which, methought, his action bore an intimate resemblance in uttering this plain sentence:

——he took it up;
But scarce was it unfolded to his sight,
When he, as if an arrow pierc'd his eye,
Started, and trembling dropp'd it on the ground.

In pronouncing the first two words, this egregious actor stoops down, and seems to take up something from the stage; then proceeding to repeat what follows, mimicks the manner of unfolding a letter: when he mentions the simile of an arrow piercing the eye, he darts his fore-finger towards that organ, then recoils with great violence when the word *started* is expressed; and when he comes to *trembling dropp'd it on the ground*, he throws all his limbs into a tremulous motion, and shakes the imaginary paper from his hand. The latter part of the description is carried on with the same minute gesticulation while he says—

Pale and aghast awhile my victim stood.
Disguis'd a sigh or two, and puff'd them from him;
Then rubb'd his brow, and took it up again.

The player's countenance assumes a wild stare, he sighs twice most piteously, as if he were on the point of suffocation, scrubs his forehead, and bending his body, apes the action of snatching an object from the floor. Nor is this dexterity of dumb-shew omitted, when he concludes his intimation in these three lines:

At first, he look'd as if he meant to read it;
But, check'd by rising fears, he crush'd it thus,
And thrust it, like an adder, in his bosom.

Here

Here the judicious performer imitates the confusion and concern of Alonzo; seems to cast his eyes upon something, from which they are immediately withdrawn with horror and precipitation; then shutting his fist with a violent squeeze, as if he intended to make immediate application to Isabella's nose, he rams it in his own bosom, with all the horror and agitation of a thief taken in the manner. Were the player debarred the use of speech, and obliged to act to the eyes only of the audience, this mimickry might be a necessary conveyance of his meaning; but when he is at liberty to signify his ideas by language, nothing can be more trivial, forced, unnatural, and antick, than this superfluous mummery. Not that I would exclude from the representation the graces of action, without which the choicest sentiments, cloathed in the most exquisite expression, would appear unanimated and insipid; but these are as different from this ridiculous burlesque, as is the demeanor of a Tully in the rostrum, from the tricks of a Jack-pudding on a mountebank's stage: and for the truth of what I alledge, I appeal to the observation of any person who has considered the elegance of attitude and propriety of gesture, as they are universally acknowledged in the real characters of life. Indeed, I have known a Gascon, whose limbs were as eloquent as his tongue; he never mentioned the word *sleep* without reclining his head upon his hand; when he had occasion to talk of an horse, he always started up and trotted across the room, except when he was so situated that he could not stir without incommoding the company, and in that case he contented himself with neighing aloud: if a dog happened to be the subject of his conversation, he wagged his tail, and grinned in a most significant manner; and one day he expressed his desire of going backwards with such natural imitation of his purpose, that every body in the room firmly believed he had actually overshot himself, and fortified their nostrils accordingly. Yet no man ever looked upon this virtuoso to be the standard of pro-

priety in point of ſpeaking and deportment. For my own part, I confeſs the player in queſtion would, by dint of theſe qualifications, make a very good figure in the character of Pantaloon's lacquey, in the entertainment of Perſeus and Andromeda, and perhaps might acquire ſome reputation, by turning the Revenge into a pantomine; in which caſe, I would adviſe him to come upon the ſtage, provided with an handful of flour, in order to beſm ear his face, when he pronounces *pale and aghaſt*, &c. and methinks he ought to illuſtrate the adder with an hideous hiſs. But let us now come to the other ſituation, in which this modern Æſopus is ſuppoſed to diſtinguiſh himſelf ſo much; I mean that ſame *eclairciſſement* comprehended in, *Know then, 'twas*——*I*. His manner, I own, may be altered ſince I was preſent at the repreſentation of that performance: but certain I am, when I beheld him in that critical conjuncture, his behaviour appeared to me ſo uncouth, that I really imagined he was viſited by ſome epileptick diſtemper; for he ſtood tottering and gaſping for the ſpace of two minutes, like a man ſuddenly ſtruck with the palſy; and after various diſtortions and ſide ſhakings, as if he had got fleas in his doublet, heaved up from his lungs the letter *I*, like a huge anchor from foul ground.'

This criticiſm was acceptable to the majority of the college, who had no great veneration for the player in queſtion; and his admirer, without making any reply, aſked in a whiſper, of the gentleman who ſat next to him, if Pickle had not offered ſome production to the ſtage, and met with a repulſe.

CHAP. X.

The Young Gentleman is introduced to a Virtuoſo of the firſt Order, and commences Yelper.

HITHERTO Peregrine had profeſſed himſelf an author, without reaping the fruits of that occupation, except the little fame he had acquired by his late ſatire; but now he thought it high time to weigh *ſolid pudding*

pudding against empty praise; and therefore engaged with some booksellers in a certain translation, which he obliged himself to perform for the consideration of two hundred pounds. The articles of agreement being drawn, he began his task with great eagerness; rose early in the morning to his work, at which he laboured all day long; went abroad with the bats in the evening, and appeared in the coffee-house, where he amused himself with the newspapers and conversation till nine o'clock; then he retired to his own apartment, and after a slight repast, betook himself to rest, that he might be able to unroost with the cock. This sudden change from his former way of life agreed so ill with his disposition, that, for the first time, he was troubled with flatulencies and indigestion, which produced anxiety and dejection of spirits; and the nature of his situation began in some measure to discompose his brain; a discovery which he no sooner made, than he had recourse to the advice of a young physician, who was a member of the college of authors, at this time one of our hero's most intimate acquaintance.

The son of Æsculapius having considered his case, imputed his disorder to the right cause, namely, want of exercise; dissuaded him from such close application to study, until he should be gradually familiarized to a sedentary life; advised him to enjoy his friend and his bottle in moderation, and wean himself from his former customs by degrees, and, above all things, to rise immediately after his first sleep, and exercise himself in a morning's walk. In order to render the last part of the prescription the more palatable, the doctor promised to attend him in these early excursions, and even to introduce him to a certain personage of note, who gave a sort of publick breakfasting to the minor virtuosi of the age, and often employed his interest in behalf of those who properly cultivated his countenance and approbation.

This proposal was extremely acceptable to our young gentleman; who, besides the advantage which might

accrue to him from such a valuable connection, foresaw much entertainment and satisfaction in the discourse of so many learned guests. The occasions of his health and interest, moreover, coincided in another circumstance; the minister's levee being kept betimes in the morning; so that he could perform his walk, yield his attendance, and breakfast at this philosophical board, without encroaching a great deal upon his other avocations.

Measures being thus preconcerted, the physician conducted our adventurer to the house of this celebrated sage, to whom he recommended him as a gentleman of genius and taste, who craved the honour of his acquaintance: but he had previously smoothed the way to his introduction, by representing Peregrine as a young fellow of great ambition, spirit, and address, who could not fail to make a figure in the world; that therefore he would be a creditable addition to the subordinates of such a patron; and by his qualifications, intrepidity, and warmth of temper, turn out a consummate herald of his fame.

Upon these considerations, he met with a most engaging reception from the entertainer, who was a well-bred man, of some learning, generosity, and taste; but his foible was, the desire of being thought the inimitable pattern of all three.

It was with a view to acquire and support this character, that this house was open to all those who had any pretensions to literature; consequently he was surrounded by a strange variety of pretenders; but none were discouraged, because he knew that even the most insignificant might, in some shape, conduce to the propagation of his praise. A babbler, though he cannot run upon the scent, may spring the game, and by his yelping help to fill up the cry: no wonder, then, that a youth of Pickle's accomplishments was admitted, and even invited into the pack. After having enjoyed a very short private audience in the closet, our young gentleman was shewn into another room, where half dozen

dozen of his fellow adherents waited for their Mæcenas; who in a few minutes appeared, with a most gracious aspect received the compliments of the morning, and sat down to breakfast in the midst of them without any farther ceremony.

The conversation at first turned upon the weather, which was investigated in a very philosophical manner by one of the company, who seemed to have consulted all the barometers and thermometers that ever were invented, before he would venture to affirm that it was a chill morning. This subject being accurately discussed, the chief enquired about the news of the learned world; and his inclination was no sooner expressed, than every guest opened his mouth, in order to gratify his curiosity: but he that first captivated his attention was a meagre, shrivelled antiquary, who looked like an animated mummy, which had been scorched among the sands of the desart. He told the patron, that he had by accident met with a medal, which, though it was defaced by time, he would venture to pronounce a genuine antique, from the ringing and taste of the metal, as well as from the colour and composition of the rust: so saying, he produced a piece of copper coin, so consumed and disguised by age, that scarce a vestige of the impression was to be perceived. Nevertheless, this connoisseur pretended to distinguish a face in profile, from which he concluded that the piece was of the Upper Empire, and on the reverse he endeavoured to point out the bulb of the spear, and part of the parazonium, which were the insignia of the Roman Virtus, together with the fragment of one fold of the multicium in which she was cloathed. He likewise had discovered an angle of the letter N; and at some distance an entire I; from these circumstances conjecturing, and indeed concluding, that the medal was struck by Severus, in honour of the victory he obtained over his rival Niger, after he had forced the passes of Mount Taurus. This criticism seemed very satisfactory to the entertainer, who hav-

ing

ing examined the coin by the help of his ſpectacles, plainly diſcerned the particulars which the owner had mentioned, and was pleaſed to term his account of the matter a very ingenious explanation.

The curioſity was circulated through the hands of all preſent, and every virtuoſo, in his turn, licked the copper, and rung it upon the hearth, declaring his aſſent to the judgment which had been pronounced. At length it fell under the inſpection of our young gentleman; who, though no antiquarian, was very well acquainted with the current coin of his own country, and no ſooner caſt his eyes upon the valuable antique, than he affirmed, without heſitation, that it was no other than the ruins of an Engliſh farthing, and that ſame ſpear, parazonium, and multicium, the remains of the emblems and drapery with which the figure of Britannia is delineated on our copper money.

This hardy aſſeveration ſeemed to diſconcert the patron, while it incenſed the medaliſt, who grinning like an enraged baboon, "What d'ye tell me of a braſs farthing?" ſaid he. "Did you ever know modern braſs of ſuch a reliſh? Do but taſte it, young gentleman; and ſure I am, if you have ever been converſant with ſubjects of this kind, you will find as wide a difference in the ſavour between this and an Engliſh farthing, as can poſſibly be perceived betwixt an onion and a turnip: beſides, this medal has the true Corinthian ring; then the attitude is upright, whereas that of Britannia is reclining; and how is it poſſible to miſtake a branch of palm for a parazonium?"

All the reſt of the company eſpouſed the virtuoſo's ſide of the queſtion, becauſe the reputation of each was concerned. The patron finding himſelf in the ſame circumſtance, aſſumed a ſolemnity of feature, daſhed with a ſmall mixture of diſpleaſure; and told Peregrine, that as he had not made that branch of literature his particular ſtudy, he was not ſurprized to ſee him miſtaken in his opinion. Pickle immediately underſtood the reproof. Though he was ſhocked at the vanity

vanity or infatuation of his entertainer and fellow-guests, asked pardon for his presumption, which was accordingly excused, in consideration of his inexperience; and the English farthing dignified with the title of a true antique.

The next person that addressed himself to the chief was a gentleman of a very mathematical turn, who valued himself upon the improvements he had made in several domestick machines, and now presented the plan of a new contrivance for cutting cabbages, in such a manner as would secure the stock against the rotting rain, and enable it to produce a plenteous after crop of delicious sprouts. In this important machine he had united the whole mechanick powers, with such massy complication of iron and wood, that it could not have been moved without the assistance of an horse, and a road made for the conveniency of the draught. These objections were so obvious, that they occurred at first sight to the inspector general, who greatly commended the invention, which, he observed, might be applied to several other useful purposes, could it once be rendered a little more portable and commodious.

The inventor, who had not foreseen these difficulties, was not prepared to surmount them; but he took the hint in good part, and promised to task his abilities anew, in altering the constitution of his design. Not but that he underwent some severe irony from the rest of the virtuosi, who complimented him upon the momentous improvement he had made, by which a family might save a dish of greens in a quarter, for so trifling an expence as that of purchasing, working and maintaining, such a stupendous machine: but no man was ever more sarcastick in his remark upon this piece of mechanism than the naturalist, who next appealed to the patron's approbation for a curious disquisition he had made touching the procreation of muck flies, in which he had laid down a curious method of collecting, preserving, and hatching, the eggs of these insects, even in the winter, by certain modifications of artificial heat.

heat. The nature of this diſcovery was no ſooner communicated, than Peregrine, unable to contain himſelf, was ſeized with a fit of laughter, which infected every perſon at the table, the landlord himſelf not excepted, who found it impoſſible to preſerve his wonted gravity of face.

Such unmannerly mirth did not fail to mortify the philoſopher; who, after ſome pauſe, during which, indignation and diſdain were painted in his countenance, reprehended our young gentleman for his unphiloſophical behaviour, and undertook to prove, that the ſubject of his enquiry was of infinite conſequence to the progreſs and increaſe of natural knowledge: but he found no quarter from the vengeful engineer, who now returned his ironical compliments with great emphaſis, upon this hot-bed for the generation of vermin, and give him a place among their memoirs, as a diſtinguiſhed promoter of the uſeful arts. "If," ſaid he, "you had employed your ſtudies in finding out ſome effectual method to deſtroy thoſe inſects which prejudice and annoy mankind, in all probability you muſt have been contented with the contemplation of the good you had done; but this curious expedient for multiplying maggots, will ſurely intitle you to an honourable rank in the liſt of learned philoſophers."—"I don't wonder," replied the naturaliſt, "that you ſhould be ſo much averſe to the propagation of inſects, becauſe, in all likelihood, you are afraid that they will not leave you a cabbage to cut down with the ſame miraculous machine."—"Sir," anſwered the mechanick, with great bitterneſs of voice and aſpect, "if the cabbage be as light-headed as ſome muck-worm philoſophers, it will not be worth cutting down."—"I never diſpute upon cabbage with the ſon of a cucumber," ſaid the fly-breeder, alluding to the pedigree of his antagoniſt; who, impatient of the affront, ſtarted up with fury in his looks, exclaiming, "'Sdeath! meaning me, Sir?"

Here the patron, perceiving things drawing towards a rupture, interpoſed his authority, rebuking them for their

their intemperance, and recommending to them amity and concord againſt the Goths and Vandals of the age, who took all opportunities of ridiculing and diſcouraging the adherents of knowledge and philoſophy. After this exhortation, they had no pretence for carrying on the diſpute, which was dropped in all appearance, though the mechanick ſtill retained his reſentment; and after breakfaſt, when the company broke up, accoſted his adverſary in the ſtreet, deſiring to know how he durſt be ſo inſolent as to make that ſcurrilous reflection upon his family. The fly-fancier, thus queſtioned, accuſed the mathematician of having been the aggreſſor, in likening his head to a light cabbage; and here the altercation being renewed, the engineer proceeded to the illuſtration of his mechanicks, tilting up his hand like a balance, thruſting it forward by way of lever, embracing the naturaliſt's noſe like a wedge betwixt two of his fingers, and turning it round with the momentum of a ſcrew or peritrochium. Had they been obliged to decide the diſpute with equal arms, the aſſailant would have had great advantage over the other, who was very much his inferior in muſcular ſtrength; but the philoſopher being luckily provided with a cane, no ſooner diſengaged himſelf from this opprobrious application, than he handled his weapon with great dexterity about the head and ſhoulders of his antagoniſt; who finding this ſhower of blows very diſagreeable, was fain to betake himſelf to his heels for ſhelter, and was purſued by the angry victor, who chaſed him from one end of the ſtreet to the other, affording unſpeakable ſatisfaction to the multitude, as well as to our hero and to his introductor, who were ſpectators of the whole ſcene.

Thus was our adventurer initiated in the ſociety of Yelpers, though he did not as yet fully underſtand the nature of his office, which was explained by the young phyſician, who chid him for his blunt behaviour in the caſe of the medal; and gave him to underſtand, that their patron's favour was neither to be gained nor preſerved

by any man that would pretend to convict him of a mistake: he therefore counselled him to respect this foible, and cultivate the old gentleman with all the zeal and veneration which a regard to his own character would permit him to pay. This task was the easier to one of our young gentleman's pliant disposition, because the virtuoso's behaviour was absolutely free from that insolent self-conceit, which he could not bear without disgust; the senior was, on the contrary, mild and beneficent; and Pickle was rather pleased than shocked at his weakness, because it flattered his vanity with the supposition of his own superior sense.

Cautioned in this manner, Peregrine profited so much by his insinuating qualifications, that, in a very little time, he was looked upon as one of the chief favourites of the patron, to whom he dedicated a small occasional poem; and every body believed he would reap the fruits of his attachment among the first of the old gentleman's dependants.

CHAP. XI.

Peregrine finding himself neglected by Sir Steady Steerwell, expostulates with him in a Letter; in Consequence of which, he is forbid his House, loses his Pension, and incurs the Charge of Lunacy.

THIS prospect of success, together with his expectations from the minister, whom he did not neglect, helped to comfort him under the reverse of fortune which he had undergone, and the uncertainty of the lawsuit, which he still maintained for the recovery of his ten thousand pounds. The lawyers, indeed, continued to drain his pocket of money, while they filled his brain with unsubstantial hope; and he was actually obliged to borrow money from his bookseller, on the strength of the translation, in order to satisfy the demands of those ravenous harpies, rather than lay the misanthrope under any difficulties, or have recourse to his friend Hatchway, who lived at the garrison, entirely ignorant of his distress. This was not at all alleviated by the arrival of the Indiaman in which he had adventured

sev-

ſeven hundred pounds, as we have already obſerved; for he was given to underſtand, that the borrower was left dangerouſly ill at Bombay when the ſhip failed, and that his chance for retrieving his money was extremely ſlender.

So ſituated, it is not to be ſuppoſed that he led a life of tranquillity, though he made a ſhift to ſtruggle with the remonſtrances of misfortune; yet ſuch a guſh of affliction would ſometimes ruſh upon his thoughts, as overwhelmed all the ideas of his hope, and ſunk him to the very bottom of deſpondence. Every equipage that paſſed him in the ſtreet, every perſon of rank and fortune that occurred to his view, recalled the gay images of his former life, with ſuch mortifying reflection as ſtabbed him to the very ſoul. He lived, therefore, inceſſantly expoſed to all the pangs of envy and diſquiet. When I ſay envy, I do not mean that ſordid paſſion, in conſequence of which a man repines at his neighbour's ſucceſs, howſoever deſerved; but that ſelf-tormenting indignation which is inſpired by the proſperity of folly, ignorance, and vice. Without the intervening gleams of enjoyment, which he felt in the converſation of a few friends, he could not have ſupported his exiſtence; or, at leaſt, he muſt have ſuffered ſome violent diſcompoſure of the brain: but one is ſtill finding ſome circumſtance of alleviation, even in the worſt of conjectures; and Pickle was ſo ingenious in theſe reſearches, that he maintained a good battle with diſappointment, till the revolution of the term at which he had received his penſion of three hundred pounds.

However, ſeeing the day elapſe, without touching his allowance, notwithſtanding his ſignificant method of preſenting himſelf at the miniſter's levee, when the year was expired he wrote a letter to Sir Steady, reminding him of his ſituation and promiſe, and giving him to underſtand, that his occaſions were ſuch as compelled him to demand his ſalary for the enſuing year.

In the morning after this letter was conveyed, the

author went to his honour's houſe, in expectation of being admitted by particular order; but was miſtaken in his hope, the miniſter not being viſible. He then made his appearance at the levee, in hopes of being cloſeted; but though he took all opportunities of watching Sir Steady's eyes, he could not obtain one glance, and had the pleaſure of ſeeing him retire, without being favoured with the leaſt notice. Theſe circumſtances of wilful neglect were not over and above agreeable to our young hero, who, in the agonies of vexation and reſentment, went home, and compoſed a moſt acrimonious remonſtrance to his honour; in conſequence of which he was not only deprived of all pretenſions to a private audience, but expreſsly denied admittance on a public day, by Sir Steady's own order.

This prohibition, which announced his total ruin, filled him with rage, horror, and deſpair: he inſulted the porter who ſignified the miniſter's command, threatening to chaſtiſe him upon the ſpot for his preſumption, and vented the moſt virulent imprecations upon his maſter, to the aſtoniſhment of thoſe who chanced to enter during this conference. Having exhauſted himſelf in theſe vain exclamations, he returned to his lodgings in a moſt frantick condition, biting his lips ſo that the blood ran from his mouth, daſhing his head and fiſts againſt the ſides of his chimney, and weeping with the moſt bitter expreſſions of woe.

Pipes, whoſe perception had been juſt ſufficient to let him ſee that there was ſome difference between the preſent and former ſituation of his maſter, over-hearing his tranſports, eſſayed to enter his apartment, with a view of adminiſtering conſolation; and finding the door locked on the inſide, deſired admittance, proteſting that otherwiſe he would down with the bulk head in the turning of an handſpike. Peregrine ordered him to retire, on pain of his diſpleaſure, and ſwore that if he ſhould offer to break open the door, he would inſtantly ſhoot him through the head. Tom, without paying the leaſt regard to this injunction, ſet himſelf at work

immediately.

immediately. His matter, exasperated at his want of reverence and refpect, which in his prefent paroxifm appeared with the moft provoking aggravation, flew into his clofet, and fnatching up one of his piftols already loaded, no fooner faw his valet enter the apartment, in confequence of having forced the lock, than he prefented full at his face, and drew the trigger. Happily the priming flafhed in the pan, without communicating with the charge; fo that his furious purpofe did not take effect upon the countenance of honeft Pipes; who, difregardful of the attempt, though he knew the contents of the piece, afked, without the leaft alteration of feature, if it muft be foul weather through the whole voyage.

Peregrine, mad as he was, repented of his mifchievous intent againft fuch a faithful adherent, in the very moment of execution; and had it proved fatal, according to the defign, in all probability he would have applied another to his own head. There are certain confiderations that ftrike upon the mind with irrefiftible force, even in the midft of it's diftraction; the momentary recollection of fome particular fcene occafioned by the features of the devoted victim, hath often ftruck the dagger from the affaffin's hand. By fuch an impulfe was Pipes protected from any repeated effort of his mafter's rage; the friendly caufe of his prefent difobedience flafhed upon the conviction of Peregrine, when he beheld the rugged front of his valet, in which alfo ftood difclofed his long and faithful fervice, together with the recommendation of the deceafed commodore.

Though his wrath was immediately fuppreffed, and his heart torn with remorfe for what he had done, his brows remained ftill contracted; and darting a moft ferocious regard at the intruder, 'Villain!' faid he, 'how dare you treat me with fuch difrefpect?'—'Why fhouldn't I lend a hand for the prefervation of the fhip,' anfwered the unruffled Pipes, 'when there is more fail than ballaft aboard, and the pilot quits the helm in defpair? What fignifies one or two broken voyages,

ſo long as our timbers are ſtrong, and our veſſel in good trim; if ſhe loſes upon one tack, mayhap ſhe may gain upon t'other; and I'll be damn'd if one day or other we don't fetch up our lee-way: as for the matter of proviſion, you have ſtarted a pretty good ſtock of money into my hold, and you are welcome to hoiſt it up again when you wool?'

Here Tom was interrupted by the arrival of Mr. Crabtree, who ſeeing Peregrine with a piſtol in his hand, and ſuch wild diſorder in his looks; his head, hands, and mouth, beſmeared with blood; and moreover, ſmelling the gun-powder which had been burnt; actually believed he had either committed, or was bent upon murder, and accordingly retreated down ſtairs with infinite diſpatch. All this ſpeed could not convey him without the reach of Pipes, who overtaking him in his paſſage, carried him back into his maſter's apartment, obſerving by the way, that this was no time to ſheer off when his conſort ſtood in need of his aſſiſtance.

There was ſomething ſo ruefully ſevere in the countenance of Cadwallader, thus compelled, that at any other time our hero would have laughed at his concern; but at preſent there was nothing riſible in his diſpoſition: he had, however, laid aſide his piſtol, and endeavoured, though in vain, to compoſe his internal diſturbance; for he could not utter one ſyllable to the miſanthrope, but ſtood ſtaring at him in ſilence, with a moſt delirious aſpect. This did not tend to diſpel the diſmay of his friend; who, after ſome recollection—'I wonder,' ſaid he, 'that you have never killed your man before. Pray how may you have diſpoſed of the body?' Pickle having recovered the faculty of ſpeech, ordered his lacquey out of the room, and in a moſt incoherent detail, made Crabtree acquainted with the perfidious conduct of the miniſter.

The confidante was very glad to find his fears diſappointed; for he had really concluded that ſome life was loſt. Perceiving the youth too much agitated to be

be treated by him in his ufual ftyle, he owned that Sir Steady was a rafcal; encouraged Pickle with the hope of being one day able to make reprifals upon him; in the mean time offered him money for his immediate occafions; exhorting him to exert his own qualifications in rendering himfelf independent of fuch mifcreants; and finally counfelled him to reprefent his wrongs to the nobleman whom he had formerly obliged, with a view of interefting that peer in his behalf, or at leaft of obtaining an explanation from the minifter, that he might take no premature meafures of revenge.

Thefe admonitions were fo much milder and more agreeable than our hero expected from the mifanthrope, that they had a very favourable effect upon his tranfports, which gradually fubfided, until he became fo tractable as to promife that he would conform to his advice; in confequence of which he next morning waited upon his lordfhip, who received him very politely, as ufual, and with great patience heard his complaint, which, by the bye, he could not repeat without fome hafty ebullitions of paffionate refentment. This peer, after having gently difapproved of the letter of expoftulation, which had produced fuch unfortunate effects, kindly undertook to recommend his cafe to the minifter, and actually performed his promife that fame day, when Sir Steady informed him, to his utter aftonifhment, that the poor young gentleman was difordered in his brain, fo that he could not poffibly be provided for in a place of importance with any regard to the fervice; and it could not be expected that he (Sir Steady) would fupport his extravagance from his own private purfe: that he had, indeed, at the folicitation of a nobleman deceafed, made him a prefent of three hundred pounds, in confideration of fome lofs that he pretended to have fuftained in an election; but fince that time had perceived in him fuch indifputable marks of lunacy, both by his diftracted letters and perfonal behaviour, as obliged him to give order, that he fhould not be admitted into the houfe. To corroborate this

aſſertion, the miniſter actually called in the evidence of his own porter, and one of the gentlemen of his houſhold, who had heard the execrations that eſcaped our youth when he firſt found himſelf excluded. In ſhort, the nobleman was convinced, that Peregrine was certainly and *bona fide* mad as a March hare; and, by the help of this intimation, began to recollect ſome ſymptoms of diſtraction which appeared in his laſt viſit; he remembered a certain incoherence in his ſpeech, a violence of geſture and wildneſs of look, that now evidently denoted a diſturbed underſtanding; and he determined for his own credit and ſecurity, to diſentangle himſelf from ſuch a dangerous acquaintance.

With this view, he, in imitation of Sir Steady, commanded his gate to be ſhut againſt our adventurer; ſo that when he went to know the reſult of his lordſhip's conference with the miniſter, the door was flung in his face, and the janitor told him, through an iron grate, that he needed not to give himſelf the trouble of calling again, for his lord deſired to be excuſed from ſeeing him. He ſpoke not a word in anſwer to this declaration, which he immediately imputed to the ill offices of the miniſter, againſt whom he breathed defiance and revenge, in his way to the lodgings of Cadwallader; who being made acquainted with the manner of his reception, begged he would deſiſt from all ſchemes of vengeance, until he (Crabtree) ſhould be able to unriddle the myſtery of the whole, which he did not doubt of unveiling by means of his acquaintance with a family in which his lordſhip often ſpent the evening at whiſt.

It was not long before he had the deſired opportunity; the nobleman being under no injunctions or obligation to keep the affair ſecret, diſcovered the young gentleman's misfortune, by way of news, to the firſt company in which he happened to be; and Peregrine's name was not ſo obſcure in the faſhionable world, but that his diſorder became the general topick of converſation for a day; ſo that his friend ſoon partook of the intelligence,

intelligence, and found means to learn the particulars of the minifter's information as above related. Nay, he was in danger of becoming a profelyte to Sir Steady's opinion, when he recalled and compared every circumftance which he knew of Pickle's impatience and impetuofity.

Indeed, nothing more eafily gains credit than an imputation of madnefs fixed upon any perfon whatfoever: for when the fufpicion of the world is rouzed, and it's obfervation once fet at work, the wifeft, the cooleft man upon earth, will, by fome particulars in his behaviour, convict himfelf of the charge: every fingularity in his drefs and manner (and fuch are obfervable in every perfon) that before paffed unheeded, now rifes up in judgment againft him, with all the exaggeration of the obferver's fancy; and the fagacious examiner perceives diftraction in every glance of the eye, turn of the finger, and motion of the head: when he fpeaks, there is a ftrange peculiarity in his argument and expreffion; when he holds his tongue, his imagination teems with fome extravagant reverie; his fobriety of demeanor is no other than a lucid interval, and his paffion mere delirium.

If people of the moft fedate and infipid life and converfation are fubject to fuch criticifms, no wonder, then, they fhould take place upon a youth of Peregrine's fiery difpofition, which, on fome occafions, would have actually juftified any remarks of this kind which his greateft enemies could make. He was accordingly prefented as one of thofe enterprizing bucks, who, after having fpent their fortunes in riot and excefs, are happily bereft of their underftanding, and confequently infenfible of the want and difgrace which they have entailed upon themfelves.

Cadwallader himfelf was fo much affected with the report, that for fome time he hefitated in his deliberations upon our hero, before he could prevail upon himfelf to communicate to him the information he had received, or to treat him in other refpects as a man of

found intellects. At length, however, he ventured to make Pickle acquainted with the particulars he had learned, imparting them with such caution and circumlocution, as he thought necessary to prevent the young gentleman from transgressing all bounds of temper and moderation: but, for once, he was agreeably deceived in his prognostick. Incensed as our hero was at the conduct of the minister, he could not help laughing at the ridiculous aspersion, which he told his friend he would soon refute in a manner that should not be very agreeable to his calumniator; observing, that it was a common practice with the state pilot thus to slander those people to whom he lay under obligations which he had no mind to discharge. True it is,' said Peregrine, 'he has succeeded more than once in contrivances of this kind, having actually reduced divers people of weak heads to such extremity of despair, as hath issued in downright distraction, whereby he was rid of their importunities, and his judgment confirmed at the same time: but I have now (thank Heaven!) attained to such a pitch of philosophical resolution, as will support me against all his machinations; and I will forthwith exhibit the monster to the publick, in his true lineaments of craft, perfidy, and ingratitude.'

This indeed was the plan with which Mr. Pickle had amused himself during the researches of Crabtree; and by this time it so effectually flattered his imagination, that he believed he should be able to bring his adversary (in spite of all his power) to his own terms of submission, by distinguishing himself in the list of those who, at that period, wrote against the administration. Nor was this scheme so extravagant as it may seem to be, had he not overlooked one material circumstance, which Cadwallader himself did not recollect when he approved of this project.

While he thus meditated vengeance, the same of his disorder, in due course of circulation, reached the ears of that lady of quality, whose memoirs have appeared in the third volume of these adventures. The correspondence

pondence with which ſhe had honoured our hero had been long broke off, for the reaſon already advanced, namely, his dread of being expoſed to her infatuating charms. He had been candid enough to make her acquainted with the cauſe of exiling himſelf from her preſence; and ſhe admitted the prudence of ſelf-reſtraint, although ſhe would have been well very ſatisfied with the continuance of his intimacy and converſation, which were not at all beneath the deſire of any lady in the kingdom. Notwithſtanding this interruption, ſhe ſtill retained a friendſhip and regard for his character, and felt all the affliction of a humane heart, at the news of his misfortune and deplorable diſtemper. She had ſeen him courted and cultivated in the ſun-ſhine of his proſperity; but ſhe knew, from ſad experience, how all thoſe inſect followers ſhrink away in the winter of diſtreſs. Her compaſſion repreſented him as a poor unhappy lunatick, deſtitute of all the neceſſaries of life, dragging about the ruins of human nature, and exhibiting the ſpectacle of blaſted youth, to the ſcorn and abhorrence of his fellow-creatures. Aching with theſe charitable conſiderations, ſhe found means to learn in what part of the town he lodged; and laying aſide all ſuperfluous ceremony, went in a hackney-chair to his door, which was opened by his ever faithful Pipes.

Her ladyſhip immediately recollected the features of his truſty follower, whom ſhe could not help loving in her heart, for his attachment and fidelity; which, after ſhe had applauded with a moſt gracious commendation, ſhe kindly enquired after the ſtate of his maſter's health, and aſked if he was in a condition to be ſeen.

Tom, who could not ſuppoſe that the viſit of a fine lady would be unacceptable to a youth of Peregrine's complexion, made no verbal reply to the queſtion; but beckoning her ladyſhip with an arch ſignificance of feature, at which ſhe could not forbear ſmiling, walked ſoftly up ſtairs; and ſhe, in obedience to the ſignal, followed her guide into the apartment of our hero, whom ſhe found at a writing-table, in the very act of

compoſing

compoſing an eulogium upon his good friend Sir Steady. The nature of his work had animated his countenance with an uncommon degree of vivacity; and being dreſſed in a neat diſhabille, his figure could not have appeared to more advantage in the eye of a perſon who deſpiſed the tinſel of unneceſſary ornament. She was extremely well pleaſed to ſee her expectations ſo agreeably diſappointed; for, inſtead of the ſqualid circumſtances and wretched looks attending indigence and diſtraction, every thing was decent and genteel, and the patient's aſpect ſuch as betokened internal ſatisfaction. Hearing the ruſtling of ſilk in the room, he lifted up his eyes from the paper, and ſeeing her ladyſhip, was ſtruck with aſtoniſhment and awe, as at the unexpected apparition of ſome ſupernatural being.

Before he could recollect himſelf from his confuſion, which called the blood into his cheeks, ſhe told him, that, on the ſtrength of old acquaintance, ſhe was come to viſit him, though it was a long time ſince he had given her good reaſon to believe he had abſolutely forgot that there was ſuch a perſon as ſhe in being. After having made the moſt warm acknowledgments for this unforeſeen honour, he aſſured her ladyſhip, that the ſubject of her reproach was not his fault, but rather his very great misfortune; and that if it had been in his power to forget her ſo eaſily as ſhe ſeemed to imagine, he ſhould never have given her cauſe to tax him with want of duty and reſpect.

Still dubious of his ſituation, ſhe began to converſe with him on different ſubjects; and he acquitted himſelf ſo well in every particular, that ſhe no longer doubted his having been miſrepreſented by the malice of his enemies; and candidly told him the cauſe and intent of her coming. He was not deficient in expreſſions of gratitude for this inſtance of her generoſity and friendſhip, which even drew tears from his eyes. As to the imputation of madneſs, he explained it ſo much to her ladyſhip's ſatisfaction, that ſhe evidently perceived he had been barbarouſly dealt with, and that the

the charge was no other than a moſt villainous aſperſion.

Notwithſtanding all his endeavours to conceal the true ſtate of his finances, it was impoſſible for him to give this detail without diſcloſing ſome of the difficulties under which he laboured; and her ladyſhip's ſagacity divining the reſt, ſhe not only made him a tender of aſſiſtance, but preſented a bank-note for a conſiderable ſum, inſiſting upon his acceptance of it, as a trifling mark of her eſteem, and a ſpecimen of what ſhe was inclined to do in his behalf. But this mark of her benevolence he would by no means receive; aſſuring her that though his affairs were at preſent a little perplexed, he had never felt the leaſt circumſtance of diſtreſs, and begging that ſhe would not ſubject him to the burden of ſuch an unneceſſary obligation.

Being obliged to put up with this refuſal, ſhe proteſted ſhe would never forgive him, ſhould ſhe ever hear that he had rejected her offer when he ſtood in need of her aid; or if in time to come, he ſhould not apply to her friendſhip, if ever he ſhould find himſelf incommoded in point of fortune: 'An over-delicacy in this reſpect,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhall look upon as a diſapprobation of my own conduct; becauſe I myſelf have been obliged to have recourſe to my friends in ſuch emergencies.'

Theſe generous remonſtances and marks of particular friendſhip, could not fail to make a deep impreſſion upon the heart of our hero, which ſtill ſmarted from the former impulſe of her charms: he not only felt all thoſe tranſports which a man of honour and ſenſibility may be ſuppoſed to feel upon ſuch an occaſion, but the ſentiments of a more tender paſſion awaking in his breaſt, he could not help expreſſing himſelf in terms adapted to the emotions of his ſoul; and at length plainly told her, that were he diſpoſed to be a beggar, he would aſk ſomething of infinitely more importance to his peace, than the charitable aſſiſtance ſhe had proffered.

Her ladyſhip had too much penetration to miſtake

his

his meaning but as ſhe did not chooſe to encourage his advances, pretended to interpret his intimation into a general compliment of gallantry, and in a jocoſe manner, deſired he would not give her any reaſon to believe his lucid interval was paſt. 'In faith, my lady,' ſaid he, 'I perceive the fit coming on; and I don't ſee why I may not uſe the privilege of my diſtemper, ſo far as to declare myſelf one of your moſt paſſionate admirers.' 'If you do,' replied her ladyſhip, 'I ſhall not be fool enough to believe a madman, unleſs I were aſſured that your diſorder proceeded from your love: and that this was the caſe, I ſuppoſe you will find it difficult to prove.'—'Nay, Madam,' cried the youth, 'I have in this drawer what will convince you of my having been mad on that ſtrain; and ſince you doubt my pretenſion, you muſt give me leave to produce my teſtimonials.' So ſaying, he opened a ſcrutore, and taking out a paper, preſented her with the following Song, which he had written in her praiſe, immediately after he was made acquainted with the particulars of her ſtory.

I.

WHILE with fond rapture and amaze,
On thy tranſcendent charms I gaze,
My cautious ſoul eſſays in vain
Her peace and freedom to maintain:
Yet let that blooming form divine,
Where grace and harmony combine;
Thoſe eyes, like genial orbs that move,
Diſpenſing gladneſs, joy, and love;
In all their pomp aſſail my view,
Intent my boſom to ſubdue;
My breaſt, by wary maxims ſteel'd,
Not all thoſe charms ſhall force to yield.

II.

But when, invok'd to beauty's aid,
I ſee th' enlighten'd ſoul diſplay'd;
That ſoul, ſo ſenſibly ſedate
Amid the ſtorms of froward fate!
Thy genius active, ſtrong and clear,
Thy wit ſublime, tho' not ſevere;

The

The ſocial ardour, void of art,
That glows within thy candid heart;
My ſpirits, ſenſe, and ſtrength decay,
My reſolution dies away;
And, ev'ry faculty oppreſs'd,
Almighty Love invades my breaſt!

Her ladyſhip having peruſed this production; 'Were I inclined to be ſuſpicious,' ſaid ſhe, 'I ſhould believe that I had no ſhare in producing this compoſition, which ſeems to have been inſpired by a much more amiable object. However, I will take your word for your intention, and thank you for the unmerited compliment, though I have met with it in ſuch an accidental manner. Nevertheleſs, I muſt be ſo free as to tell you, it is now high time for you to contract that unbounded ſpirit of gallantry, which you have indulged ſo long, into a ſincere attachment for the fair Emilia, who, by all accounts, deſerves the whole of your attention and regard.' His nerves thrilled at the mention of that name, which he never heard pronounced without agitation. Rather than undergo the conſequence of a converſation upon this ſubject, he choſe to drop the theme of love altogether, and induſtriouſly introduced ſome other topick of diſcourſe.

CHAP. XII.

He writes againſt the Miniſter, by whoſe Inſtigation he is arreſted, and moves himſelf by Habeas Corpus, into the Fleet.

MY lady having prolonged her ſtay beyond the period of a common viſit, and repeated her proteſtations in the moſt frank and obliging manner, took her leave of our adventurer, who promiſed to pay his reſpects to her in a few days at her own houſe. Meanwhile, he reſumed his taſk; and having finiſhed a moſt ſevere remonſtrance againſt Sir Steady, not only with regard to his private ingratitude, but alſo to his maladminiſtration of publick affairs, he ſent to the author of a weekly paper, who had been long a profeſſed reformer in politicks; and it appeared in a very few days,

with a note of the publiſher, deſiring the favour of farther correſpondence with the author.

The animadverſions contained in this ſmall eſſay were ſo ſpirited and judicious, and a great many new lights thrown upon the ſubject with ſuch perſpicuity, as attracted the notice of the publick in an extraordinary manner, and helped to raiſe the character of the paper in which it was inſerted. The miniſter was not the laſt who examined the performance, which, in ſpite of all his boaſted temper, provoked him to ſuch a degree, that he ſet his emiſſaries at work, and by dint of corruption, procured a ſight of the manuſcript in Peregrine's own hand-writing, which he immediately recognized; but for farther confirmation of his opinion, he compared it with the two letters which he had received from our adventurer. Had he known the young gentleman's talents for declamation were ſo acute, perhaps he would never have given him cauſe to complain, but employed him in the vindication of his own meaſures; nay, he might ſtill have treated him like ſome other authors whom he had brought over from the oppoſition, had not the keenneſs of this firſt aſſault incenſed him to a deſire of revenge. He, therefore, no ſooner made this diſcovery, than he conveyed his directions to his dependant the receiver-general, who was poſſeſſed of Pickle's notes. Next day, while our author ſtood within a circle of his acquaintance, at a certain coffee-houſe, holding forth with great eloquence upon the diſeaſes of the ſtate, he was accoſted by a bailiff, who entering the room with five or ſix followers, told him aloud, that he had a writ againſt him for twelve hundred pounds, at the ſuit of Mr. Ravage Gleanum.

The whole company were aſtoniſhed at this addreſs, which did not fail to diſcompoſe the defendant himſelf, who (as it were inſtinctively) in the midſt of his confuſion, ſaluted the officer acroſs the head with his cane; in conſequence of which application he was ſurrounded and diſarmed in an inſtant by the gang, who carried him

him off to the next tavern in the most opprobrious manner. Nor did one of the spectators interpose in his behalf, or visit him in his confinement with the least tender of advice or assistance; such is the zeal of a coffeehouse friendship.

This stroke was the more severe upon our hero, as it was altogether unexpected: for he had utterly forgot the debt for which he was arrested. His present indignation was, however, chiefly kindled against the bailiff, who had done his office in such a disrespectful manner: and the first use he made of his recollection in the house to which they conducted him, was to chastise him for the insolence and indecency of his behaviour. This task he performed with his bare fists, every other weapon being previously conveyed out of his reach; and the delinquent underwent his discipline with surprising patience and resignation, asking pardon with great humility, and protesting before God, that he had never willingly and wittingly used any gentleman with ill-manners, but had been commanded to arrest our adventurer according to the express direction of the creditor, on pain of forfeiting his place.

By this declaration Peregrine was appeased, and out of a delirium of passion waked to all the horrors of reflection. All the glory of his youth was now eclipsed, all the blossoms of his hope were blasted, and he saw himself doomed to the miseries of a gaol, without the least prospect of enlargement, except in the issue of his law-suit, of which he had, for some time past, grown less and less confident every day. What would become of the unfortunate, if the constitution of the mind did not permit them to bring one passion into the field against another! passions that operate on the human breast, like poisons of a different nature, extinguishing each other's effect. Our hero's grief reigned in full despotism, until it was deposed by revenge; during the predominancy of which, he considered every thing which had happened as a circumstance conducive to it's gratification: 'If I must be a prisoner for life,' said

he to himſelf, 'if I muſt relinquiſh all my gay expectations, let me at leaſt have the ſatisfaction of clanking my chains ſo as to interrupt the repoſe of my adverſary; and let me ſearch in my own breaſt for that peace and contentment which I have not been able to find in all the ſcenes of my ſucceſs. In being detached from the world, I ſhall be delivered from folly and ingratitude, as well as exempted from an expence, which I ſhould have found it very difficult, if not impracticable, to ſupport; I ſhall have little or no temptation to miſpend my time, and more undiſturbed opportunity to earn my ſubſiſtence, and proſecute my revenge. After all, a gaol is the beſt tub to which a cynick philoſopher can retire.'

In conſequence of theſe comfortable reflections, he ſent a letter to Mr. Crabtree, with an account of his misfortune, ſignifying his reſolution to move himſelf immediately into the Fleet, and deſiring that he would ſend him ſome underſtanding attorney of his acquaintance, who would direct him into the ſteps neceſſary to be taken for that purpoſe. The miſanthrope, upon the receipt of this intimation, went in perſon to a lawyer, whom he accompanied to the ſpunging-houſe, whither the priſoner had by this time retired. Peregrine was, under the auſpices of this director, conducted to the judges chamber, where he was left in the cuſtody of a tipſtaff; and after having paid for a warrant of Habeas Corpus, by him conveyed to the Fleet, and delivered to the care of the warden.

Here he was introduced to the lodge, in which he was obliged to expoſe himſelf a full hour to the eyes of all the turnkeys and door-keepers, who took an accurate ſurvey of his perſon, that they might know him again at firſt ſight: and then he was turned looſe into the place called the Maſter's Side, having given a valuable conſideration for that privilege. This is a large range of building, containing ſome hundreds of lodging-rooms for the convenience of the priſoners, who pay ſo much per week for that accommodation.

In

In ſhort, this community is like a city detached from all communication with the neighbouring parts, regulated by it's own laws, and furniſhed with peculiar conveniencies for the uſe of the inhabitants. There is a coffee-houſe for the reſort of gentlemen, in which all ſorts of liquors are kept, and a publick kitchen where any quantity of meat is ſold at a reaſonable rate, or any kind of proviſion boiled and roaſted gratis for the poor priſoners: nay, there are certain ſervants of the publick, who are obliged to go to market at the pleaſure of individuals, without fee or reward from thoſe who employ them; nor are they cooped up ſo as to be excluded from the benefit of freſh air, there being an open area of a conſiderable extent, adjacent to the building, on which they may exerciſe themſelves in walking, ſkittles, bowls, and a variety of other diverſions, according to the inclination of each.

Our adventurer being admitted a denizen of this community, found himſelf bewildered in the midſt of ſtrangers, who, by their appearance, did not at all prepoſſeſs him in their favour; and after having ſtrolled about the place with his friend Cadwallader, repaired to the coffee-houſe, in order to be farther informed of the peculiar cuſtoms which it was neceſſary for him to know.

There, while he endeavoured to pick up intelligence from the bar-keeper, he was accoſted by a perſon in canonicals, who very civilly aſked if he was a new-comer. Being anſwered in the affirmative, he gave him the ſalutation of welcome to the ſociety, and, with great hoſpitality, undertook to initiate him in the conſtitutions of the brotherhood. This humane clergyman gave him to underſtand, that his firſt care ought to be that of ſecuring a lodging; telling him, there was a certain number of apartments in the priſon let at the ſame price, though ſome were more commodious than others; and that when the better ſort became vacant, by the removal of their poſſeſſors, thoſe who ſucceeded in point of ſeniority had the privilege of occupying the

empty tenements preferable to the reſt of the inhabitants, howſoever reſpectable they might otherwiſe be; that when the gaol was very much crouded, there was but one chamber allotted for two lodgers; but this was not conſidered as any great hardſhip upon the priſoners, becauſe, in that caſe, there was always a ſufficient number of males who willingly admitted the females to a ſhare in their apartments and beds: not but that the time had been, when this expedient would not anſwer the occaſion, becauſe after a couple had been quartered in every room, there was a conſiderable reſidue ſtill unprovided with lodging; ſo that for the time being, the laſt comers were obliged to take up their habitation in Mount Scoundrel, an apartment moſt miſerably furniſhed, in which they lay promiſcuouſly amidſt filth and vermin, until they could be better accommodated in due courſe of rotation.

Peregrine hearing the deſcription of this place, began to be very impatient about his night's lodging; and the parſon perceiving his anxiety, conducted him, without loſs of time, to the warden, who forthwith put him in poſſeſſion of a paltry chamber, for which he agreed to pay half a crown a week. This point being ſettled, his director gave him account of the different methods of eating, either ſingly, in a meſs, or at an ordinary; and adviſed him to chuſe the laſt, as the moſt reputable, offering to introduce him next day to the beſt company in the Fleet, who always dined together in publick.

Pickle having thanked this gentleman for his civilities, and promiſed to be governed by his advice, invited him to paſs the evening at his apartment; and in the mean time ſhut himſelf up with Crabtree, in order to deliberate upon the wreck of his affairs. Of all his ample fortune, nothing now remained but his wardrobe, which was not very ſumptuous, about thirty guineas in caſh, and the garriſon, which the miſanthrope counſelled him to convert into ready money for his preſent ſubſiſtence. This advice, however, he abſolutely

folutely rejected, not only on account of his having already beftowed it upon Hatchway, during the term of his natural life, but alfo with a view of retaining fome memorial of the commodore's generofity. He propofed, therefore, to finifh in this retreat the tranflation which he had undertaken, and earn his future fubfiftence by labour of the fame kind. He defired Cadwallader to take charge of his moveables, and fend him fuch moveables and cloaths as he fhould have occafion for in his confinement. But, among all his difficulties, nothing embarraffed him fo much as his faithful Pipes, whom he could no longer entertain in his fervice. He knew Tom had made fhift to pick up a competency in the courfe of his miniftration; but that reflection, though it in fome meafure alleviated, could not wholly prevent the mortification he fhould fuffer in parting with an affectionate adherent, who was by this time become as neceffary to him as one of his own members, and who was fo accuftomed to live under his command and protection, that he did not believe the fellow could reconcile himfelf to any other way of life.

Crabtree, in order to make him eafy on that fcore, offered to adopt him in the room of his own valet, whom he would difmifs; though he obferved that Pipes had been quite fpoiled in our hero's fervice. But Peregrine did not chufe to lay his friend under that inconvenience, knowing that his prefent lacquey underftood and complied with all the peculiarities of his humour, which Pipes would never be able to ftudy or regard; he therefore determined to fend him back to his fhipmate Hatchway, with whom he fpent the fore part of his life.

Thefe points being adjufted, the two friends adjourned to the coffee-houfe, with a view of enquiring into the character of the clergyman, to whofe beneficence our adventurer was fo much indebted. They learned he was a perfon who had incurred the difpleafure of the bifhop in whofe diocefe he was fettled, and, being unequal in power to his antagonift, had been driven to the

the Fleet, in consequence of his obstinate opposition; though he still found means to enjoy a pretty considerable income, by certain irregular practices in the way of his function, which income was chiefly consumed in acts of humanity to his fellow-creatures in distress.

His eulogium was scarce finished, when he entered the room, according to appointment with Peregrine, who ordering wine and something for supper to be carried to his apartment, the triumvirate went thither; and Cadwallader taking his leave for the night, the two fellow-prisoners passed the evening very sociably, our hero being entertained by his new companion with the private history of the place, some particulars of which were extremely curious. He told him, that the person who attended them at supper, bowing with the most abject servility, and worshipping them every time he opened his mouth, with the epithets of *your lordship* and *your honour*, had, a few years before, been actually a captain in the guards; who, after having run his career in the great world, had threaded every station in their community, from that of a buck of the first order, who swaggers about the Fleet in a laced coat with a footman and a whore, to the degree of a tapster, in which he was now happily settled. 'If you will take the trouble of going into the cook's kitchen,' said he, 'you will perceive a beau metamorphosed into a turnspit; and there are some hewers of wood and drawers of water in this microcosm, who have had forests and fish-ponds of their own: yet notwithstanding such a miserable reverse of fortune, they are neither objects of regard or compassion, because their misfortunes are the fruits of the most vicious extravagance, and they are absolutely insensible of the misery which is their lot. Those of our fellow-sufferers who have been reduced by undeserved losses, or the precipitation of unexperienced youth, never fail to meet with the most brotherly assistance, provided they behave with decorum, and a due sense of their unhappy circumstances. Nor are we destitute of power to chastise the licentious, who refuse

refuse to comply with the regulations of the place, and disturb the peace of the community with riot and disorder. Justice is here impartially administered by a court of equity, consisting of a select number of the most respectable inhabitants, who punish all offenders with equal judgment and resolution, after they have been fairly convicted of the crimes laid to their charge.'

The clergyman having thus explained the œconomy of the place, as well as the cause of his own confinement, began to discover signs of curiosity touching our hero's situation; and Pickle, thinking he could do no less for the satisfaction of a man who had treated him in such an hospitable manner, favoured him with a detail of the circumstances which produced his imprisonment: at the same time gratifying his resentment against the minister, which delighted in recapitulating the injuries he had received. The parson, who had been prepossessed in favour of our youth at first sight, understanding what a considerable part he had acted on the stage of life, felt his veneration increase; and pleased with the opportunity of introducing a stranger of his consequence to the club, left him to his repose or rather to ruminate on an event which he had not as yet seriously considered.

I might here, in imitation of some celebrated writers, furnish out a page or two, with the reflections he made upon the instability of human affairs, the treachery of the world, and the temerity of youth; and endeavour to decoy the reader into a smile, by some quaint observation of my own, touching the sagacious moralizer: but, besides that I look upon this practice as an impertinent anticipation of the peruser's thoughts, I have too much matter of importance upon my hands, to give the reader the least reason to believe that I am driven to such paltry shifts in order to eke out the volume. Suffice it then to say, our adventurer passed a very uneasy night, not only from the thorny suggestions of his mind, but likewise from the anguish of his body, which

suffered

ſuffered from the hardneſs of his couch, as well as from the natural inhabitants thereof, that did not tamely ſuffer his intruſion.

In the morning he was waked by Pipes, who brought upon his ſhoulder a portmanteau filled with neceſſaries, according to the direction of Cadwallader; and toſſing it down upon the floor, regaled himſelf with a quid, without the leaſt manifeſtation of concern. After ſome pauſe—'You ſee, Pipes,' ſaid his maſter, 'to what I have brought myſelf.—'Ey, ey,' anſwered the valet, 'once the veſſel is on ſhore, what ſignifies talking? We muſt bear a hand to tow her off, if we can: if ſhe won't budge for all the anchors and capſtans aboard, after we have lightened her, by cutting away her maſts, and heaving her guns and cargo overboard, why, then, mayhap a briſk gale of wind, a tide, or current ſetting from ſhore, may float her again in the blaſt of a whiſtle. Here is two hundred and ten guineas by the tale, in this here canvaſs bag; and upon this ſcrap of paper—no, avaſt—that's my diſcharge from the pariſh for Moll Trundle—ey, here it is—an order for thirty pounds upon the what-d'ye-call'em in the city; and two tickets for twenty-five and eighteen, which I lent, d'ye ſee, to Sam Studding, to buy a cargo of rum, when he hoiſted the ſign of the Commodore at St. Catharine's.' So ſaying, he ſpread his whole ſtock upon the table, for the acceptance of Peregrine; who, being very much affected with this freſh inſtance of his attachment, expreſſed his ſatisfaction at ſeeing he had been ſuch a good œconomiſt, and paid his wages up to that very day. He thanked him for his faithful ſervices; and, obſerving that he himſelf was no longer in a condition to maintain a domeſtick, adviſed him to retire to the garriſon, where he would be kindly received by his friend Hatchway, to whom he would recommend him in the ſtrongeſt terms.

Pipes looked blank at this unexpected intimation, to which he replied, that he wanted neither pay nor proviſion, but only to be employed as a tender; and

that he would not steer his course for the garrison, unless his master would first take his lumber aboard. Pickle, however, peremptorily refused to touch a farthing of the money, which he commanded him to put up; and Pipes was so mortified at his refusal, that twisting the notes together, he threw them into the fire without hesitation, crying—"Damn the money!" The canvass bag, with it's contents, would have shared the same fate, had not Peregrine started up, and snatching the paper from the flames, ordered his valet to forbear, on pain of being banished for ever from his sight. He told him, that, for the present, there was a necessity for his being dismissed, and he discharged him accordingly; but if he would go and live quietly with the lieutenant, he promised, on the first favourable turn of his fortune, to take him again into his service. In the mean time, he gave him to understand, that he neither wanted, nor would make any use of his money, which he insisted upon his pocketing immediately, on pain of forfeiting all title to his favour.

Pipes was very much chagrined at these injunctions, to which he made no reply; but sweeping the money into his bag, stalked off, in silence, with a look of grief and mortification, which his countenance had never exhibited before. Nor was the proud heart of Pickle unmoved upon this occasion: he could scarce suppress his sorrow in the presence of Pipes: and, as soon as he was gone, it vented itself in tears.

Having no great pleasure in conversing with his own thoughts, he dressed himself with all convenient dispatch, being attended by one of the occasional valets of the place, who had formerly been a rich mercer in the city; and this operation being performed, he went to breakfast at the coffee-house, where he happened to meet with his friend the clergyman, and several persons of genteel appearance, to whom the doctor introduced him as a new mess-mate. By these gentlemen he was conducted to a place where they spent the forenoon in playing at fives, an exercise in which our hero took singular delight;

light: and about one o'clock a court was held, for the trial of two delinquents, who had tranſgreſſed the laws of honeſty and good order.

The firſt who appeared at the bar was an attorney, accuſed of having picked a gentleman's pocket of his handkerchief; and, the fact being proved by inconteſtible evidence, he received ſentence: in conſequence of which he was immediately carried to the publick pump, and ſubjected to a ſevere caſcade of cold water. This cauſe being diſcuſſed, they proceeded to the trial of the other offender, who was a lieutenant of a man of war, indicted for a riot, which he had committed in company with a female, not yet taken, againſt the laws of the place, and the peace of his fellow-priſoners. The culprit had been very obſtreperous, and abſolutely refuſed to obey the ſummons, with may expreſſions of contempt and defiance againſt the authority of the court; upon which the conſtables were ordered to bring him to the bar, *vi & armis*; and he was acordingly brought before the judge, after having made a moſt deſperate reſiſtance with a hanger, by which one of the officers was dangerouſly wounded. This outrage was ſuch an aggravation of his crime, that the court would not venture to decide upon it, but remitted him to the ſentence of the warden: who, by virtue of his dictatorial power, ordered the rioter to be loaded with irons, and confined in the ſtrong room, which is a diſmal dungeon, ſituated upon the ſide of the ditch, infeſted with toads and vermin, ſurcharged with noiſome damps, and impervious to the leaſt ray of light.

Juſtice being done upon theſe criminals, our adventurer and his company adjourned to the ordinary, which was kept at the coffee-houſe; and he found, upon enquiry, that his meſs-mates conſiſted of one officer, two under-writers, three projectors, an alchymiſt, an attorney, a parſon, a brace of poets, a baronet, and a knight of the bath. The dinner, though not ſumptuous, nor very elegantly ſerved up, was nevertheleſs ſubſtantial, and pretty well dreſſed; the wine was tolerable, and

and all the guests as chearful as if they had been utter strangers to calamity; so that our adventurer began to relish the company, and mix in the conversation, with that sprightliness and ease which were peculiar to his disposition. The repast being ended, the reckoning paid, and part of the gentlemen withdrawn to cards, or other avocations, those who remained, among whom Peregrine made one, agreed to spend the afternoon in conversation over a bowl of punch; and the liquor being produced, they passed the time very socially in various topicks of discourse, including many curious anecdotes relating to their own affairs. No man scrupled to own the nature of the debt for which he was confined, unless it happened to be some piddling affair; but on the contrary, boasted of the importance of the sum, as a circumstance that implied his having been a person of consequence in life; and he who had made the most remarkable escapes from bailiffs, was looked upon as a man of superior genius and address.

Among other extraordinary adventures of this kind, none was more romantick than the last elopement atchieved by the officer; who told them he had been arrested for a debt of two hundred pounds, at a time when he could not command as many pence, and conveyed to the bailiff's house, in which he continued a whole fortnight, moving his lodgings higher and higher, from time to time, in proportion to the decay of his credit; until, from the parlour, he made a regular ascent to the garret. There, while he ruminated on his next step, which would have been to the Marshalsea, and saw the night come on, attended with hunger and cold, the wind began to blow, and the tiles of the house rattled with the storm: his imagination was immediately struck with the idea of escaping unperceived, amidst the darkness and noise of the tempest, by creeping out of the window of his apartment, and making his way over the tops of the adjoining houses. Glowing with this prospect, he examined the passage, which, to his infinite mortification, he found grated with iron bars on the outside; but

even this difficulty did not divert him from his purpoſe. Conſcious of his own ſtrength, he believed himſelf able to make an hole through the roof, which ſeemed to be ſlender and crazy; and on this ſuppoſition, he barricadoed the door with the whole furniture of the room; then, ſetting himſelf to work with a poker, he in a few minutes effected a paſſage for his hand, with which he gradually ſtripped off the boards and tiling, ſo as to open a ſally-port for his whole body, through which he fairly ſet himſelf free, groping his way towards the next tenement. Here, however, he met with an unlucky accident: his hat being blown off his head, chanced to fall into the court juſt as one of the bailiff's followers was knocking at the door; and this myrmidon recognizing it immediately, gave the alarm to his chief, who running up ſtairs to the garret, forced open the door in a twinkling, notwithſtanding the precautions which the priſoner had taken, and, with his attendant, purſued the fugitive through his own track. "After this chace had continued ſome time," ſaid the officer, "to the imminent danger of all three, I found my progreſs ſuddenly ſtopped by a ſky-light, through which I perceived ſeven taylors ſitting at work upon a board. Without the leaſt heſitation or previous notice, I plunged among them with my backſide foremoſt. Before they could recollect themſelves from the conſternation occaſioned by ſuch a ſtrange viſit, I told them my ſituation, and gave them to underſtand that there was no time to be loſt. One of the number, taking the hint, led me inſtantly down ſtairs, and diſmiſſed me at the ſtreet-door; while the bailiff and his follower, arriving at the breach, were deterred from entering by the brethren of my deliverer, who preſenting their ſhears, like a range of *chevaux de friſe*, commanded them to retire on pain of immediate death: and the catchpole, rather than riſk his carcaſe, conſented to diſcharge the debt, comforting himſelf with the hope of making me priſoner again. There, however, he was diſappointed: I kept ſnug, and laughed at his eſ-

cape-

cape-warrant, until I was ordered abroad with the regiment, when I conveyed myſelf in a hearſe to Graveſend, where I embarked for Flanders; but, being obliged to come over again on the recruiting ſervice, I was nabbed on another ſcore: and all the ſatisfaction my firſt captor has been able to obtain, is a writ of detainer; which, I believe, will fix me in this place, until the Parliament, in it's great goodneſs, ſhall think proper to diſcharge my debts by a new act of inſolvency.'

Every body owned, that the captain's ſucceſs was equal to the hardineſs of his enterprize, which was altogether in the ſtyle of a ſoldier: but one of the merchants obſerved, that he muſt have been a bailiff of ſmall experience, who would truſt a priſoner of that conſequence in ſuch an unguarded place. "If the captain," ſaid he, "had fallen into the hands of ſuch a cunning raſcal as the fellow that arreſted me, he would not have found it ſuch an eaſy matter to eſcape; for the manner in which I was caught, is, perhaps, the moſt extraordinary that ever was practiſed in theſe realms. You muſt know, gentlemen, I ſuffered ſuch loſſes by inſuring veſſels during the war, that I was obliged to ſtop payment, though my expectations were ſuch as encouraged me to manage one branch of buſineſs, without coming to any immediate compoſition with my creditors. In ſhort, I received conſignments from abroad as uſual; and that I might not be ſubject to the viſits of thoſe catchpoles, I never ſtirred abroad, but turning my firſt-floor into a warehouſe, ordered all my goods to be hoiſted up by a crane, fixed to the upper ſtory of my houſe. Divers were the ſtratagems practiſed by thoſe ingenious ferrets, with a view of decoying me from the walls of my fortification. I received innumerable meſſages from people who wanted to ſee me at certain taverns upon particular buſineſs: I was ſummoned into the country, to ſee my own mother, who was ſaid to be at the point of death. A gentlewoman, one night, was taken in labour on my threſhold: at

another time, I was diſturbed with the cry of murder in the ſtreet; and once I was alarmed by a falſe fire. But, being ſtill upon my guard, I baffled all their attempts, and thought myſelf quite ſecure from their invention, when one of thoſe blood-hounds, inſpired, I believe, by the devil himſelf, contrived a ſnare by which I was at laſt entrapped. He made it his buſineſs to enquire into the particulars of my traffick; and underſtanding that, among other things, there were ſeveral cheſts of Florence entered at the cuſtom-houſe on my behalf, he ordered himſelf to be encloſed in a box of the ſame dimenſions, with air-holes in the bottom, for the benefit of breathing, and No. III, marked upon the cover; and being conveyed to my door in a cart among other goods, was, in his turn, hoiſted up to my warehouſe. where I ſtood with a hammer, in order to open the cheſts, that I might compare the contents with the invoice. You may gueſs my ſurprize and conſternation, when, upon uncovering the box, I ſaw a bailiff rearing up his head, like Lazarus from the grave, and heard him declare that he had a writ againſt me for a thouſand pounds. Indeed, I aimed the hammer at his head, but in the hurry of my confuſion miſſed my mark; before I could repeat the blow, he ſtarted up with great agility, and executed his office in ſight of ſeveral evidences, whom he had aſſembled in the ſtreet for that purpoſe; ſo that I could not poſſibly diſentangle myſelf from the toil, without incurring an eſcape-warrant, from which I had no protection. But, had I known the contents of the cheſt, by all that's good! I would have ordered my porter to raiſe it up as high as the crane would permit, and then have cut the rope by accident.'

'That expedient,' ſaid the knight with the red ribbon, 'would have diſcouraged him from ſuch hazardous attempts for the future, and would have been an example *in terrorem* of all his brethren. The ſtory puts me in mind of a deliverance atchieved by Tom Hackabout, a very ſtout, honeſt fellow, and old acquaint-

ance

ance of mine, who had been ſo famous for maiming bailiffs, that anoher gentleman having been ill-uſed at a ſpunging-houſe, no ſooner obtained his liberty, than, with a view of being revenged upon the landlord, he, for five ſhillings, bought one of Tom's notes, which ſold at a very large diſcount, and taking out a writ upon it, put it into the hands of the bailiff who had uſed him ill. The catch-pole, after a diligent ſearch, had an opportunity of executing the writ upon the defendant, who, without ceremony, broke one of his arms, fractured his ſcull, and belaboured him in ſuch a manner, that he lay without ſenſe or motion on the ſpot. By ſuch exploits, this hero became ſo formidable, that no ſingle bailiff would undertake to arreſt him; ſo that he appeared in all publick places untouched. At length, however, ſeveral officers of the Marſhalſea court entered into a confederacy againſt him; and two of the number, attended by three deſperate followers, ventured to arreſt him one day in the Strand, near Hungerford Market: he found it impoſſible to make reſiſtance, becauſe the whole gang ſprung upon him at once, like ſo many tigers, and pinioned his arms ſo faſt that he could not wag a finger. Perceiving himſelf fairly overpowered, he deſired to be conducted forthwith to gaol, and was ſtowed in a boat accordingly: by that time they had reached the middle of the river, he found means to overſet the wherry by accident, when every man conſulted his own ſafety. As for Hackabout, to whom that element was quite familiar, he mounted aſtride upon the keel of the boat, and exhorted the bailiffs to ſwim for their lives; proteſting, before God, that they had no other chance to be ſaved.

"The watermen were immediately taken up by ſome of their own friends, who, far from yielding any aſſiſtance to the catchpoles, kept aloof, and exulted in their calamity. In ſhort, two of the five went to the bottom, and never ſaw the light of God's ſun; and the other three, with great difficulty, ſaved themſelves by laying hold on the rudder of a dung-barge, to which

they were carried by the ſtream, while Tom, with great deliberation, ſwam acroſs to the Surry ſhore. After this atchievement, he was ſo much dreaded by the whole fraternity, that they ſhivered at the very mention of his name; and this character, which ſome people would think an advantage to a man in debt, was the greateſt misfortune that could poſſibly happen to him: becauſe no tradeſman would give him credit for the leaſt trifle, on the ſuppoſition that he could not indemnify himſelf in the common courſe of law."

The parſon did not approve of Mr. Hackabout's method of eſcaping, which he conſidered as a very unchriſtian attempt upon the lives of his fellow-ſubjects. "It is enough," ſaid he, "that we elude the laws of our country, without murdering the officers of juſtice: for my own part, I can lay my hand upon my heart, and ſafely ſay, that I forgive from my ſoul the fellow by whom I was made a priſoner; although the circumſtances of his behaviour were treacherous, wicked, and profane. You muſt know, Mr. Pickle, I was one day called into my chapel, in order to join a couple in the holy bands of matrimony; and my affairs being at that time ſo ſituated, as to lay me under apprehenſions of an arreſt, I cautiouſly ſurveyed the man through a lattice which was made for that purpoſe, before I would venture to come within his reach. He was cloathed in a ſeaman's jacket and trowzers, and had ſuch an air of ſimplicity in his countenance, as diveſted me of all ſuſpicion: I therefore, without farther ſcruple, truſted myſelf in his preſence, began to exerciſe the duty of my function, and had actually performed one half of the ceremony, when the ſuppoſed woman, pulling out a paper from her boſom, exclaimed with a maſculine voice, "Sir, you are my priſoner, I have got a writ againſt you for five hundred pounds." I was thunderſtruck at this declaration, not ſo much on account of my own misfortune, which (thank Heaven!) I can bear with patience and reſignation, as at the impiety of the wretch; firſt, in diſguiſing ſuch a worldly aim under the cloak of

of religion; and, ſecondly, in proſtituting the ſervice, when there was no occaſion for ſo doing, his deſign having previouſly taken effect. Yet I forgive him, poor ſoul! becauſe he knew not what he did; and I hope you, Sir Sipple, will exert the ſame Chriſtian virtue towards the man by whom you was likewiſe over-reached."

"Oh, damn the raſcal!" cried the knight, "were I his judge, he ſhould be condemned to flames everlaſting. A villain! to diſgrace me in ſuch a manner, before almoſt all the faſhionable company in town." Our hero expreſſing a curioſity to know the particulars of this adventure, the knight gratified his deſire by telling him, that one evening, while he was engaged in a *partie* of cards at a drum in the houſe of a certain lady of quality, he was given to underſtand by one of the ſervants, that a ſtranger, very richly dreſſed, was juſt arrived in a chair, preceded by five footmen with flambeaus, and that he refuſed to come up ſtairs, until he ſhould be introduced by Sir Sipple. "Upon this notice," continued the knight, "I judged it was ſome of my quality friends; and having obtained her ladyſhip's permiſſion to bring him up, went down to the hall, and perceived a perſon, whom, to the beſt of my recollection, I had never ſeen before. However, his appearance was ſo magnificent that I could not harbour the leaſt ſuſpicion of his true quality; and ſeeing me advance, he ſaluted me with a very genteel bow, obſerving, that though he had not the honour of my acquaintance, he could not diſpenſe with waiting upon me, even on that occaſion, in conſequence of a letter which he had received from a particular friend. So ſaying, he put a paper into my hand, intimating, that he had got a writ againſt me for ten thouſand pounds, and that it would be my intereſt to ſubmit without reſiſtance, for he was provided with a guard of twenty men, who ſurrounded the door in different diſguiſes, determined to ſecure me againſt all oppoſition. Enraged at the ſcoundrel's fineſſe, and truſting to the aſſiſtance of the real

footmen

footmen aſſembled in the hall, "So, you are a raſcally bailiff," ſaid I, "who have aſſumed the garb of a gentleman, in order to diſturb her ladyſhip's company. Take this fellow, my lads, and roll him in the kennel: here are ten guineas for your trouble." Theſe words were no ſooner pronounced, than I was ſeized, lifted up, placed in a chair, and carried off in the twinkling of an eye: not but that the ſervants of the houſe, and ſome other footmen, made a motion towards my reſcue, and alarmed all the company above; but the bailiff affirming with undaunted effrontery, that I was taken up upon an affair of ſtate, and ſo many people appearing in his behalf, the counteſs would not ſuffer the ſuppoſed meſſenger to be inſulted, and he carried me to the county-gaol without farther lett or moleſtation."

CHAP. XIII.

Pickle ſeems tolerably well reconciled to his Cage; and is by the Clergyman entertained with the Memoirs of a noted Perſonage, whom he ſees by Accident in the Fleet.

THE knight had ſcarce finiſhed his narrative, when our hero was told, that a gentleman in the coffee-room wanted to ſee him; and when he went thither, he found his friend Crabtree, who had tranſacted all his affairs according to the determination of the preceding day; and now gave him an account of the remarks he had overheard on the ſubject of his misfortune; for the manner of the arreſt was ſo publick and extraordinary, that thoſe who were preſent, immediately propagated it among their acquaintance, and it was that ſame evening diſcourſed upon at ſeveral tea and card-tables, with this variation from the truth, that the debt amounted to twelve thouſand, inſtead of twelve hundred pounds: from which circumſtance it was conjectured, that Peregrine was a bite from the beginning, who had found credit on account of his effrontery and appearance, and impoſed himſelf upon the town as a young gentleman of fortune. They rejoiced, therefore, at his calamity,

they conſidered as a juſt puniſhment for his fraud and preſumption, and began to review certain particulars of his conduct, and plainly demonſtrated him to be a rank adventurer, long before he had arrived at this end of his career.

Pickle, who now believed his glory was ſet for ever, received this intelligence with that diſdain which enables a man to detach himſelf effectually from the world, and, with great tranquillity, gave the miſanthrope an entertaining detail of what he had ſeen and heard ſince their laſt parting. While they amuſed themſelves in this manner over a diſh of coffee, they were joined by the parſon, who congratulated our hero upon his bearing miſchance with ſuch philoſophick quiet, and began to regale the two friends with ſome curious circumſtances relating to the private hiſtory of the ſeveral priſoners, as they happened to come in.

At length a gentleman entered; at ſight of whom the clergyman roſe up, and ſaluted him with a moſt reverential bow, which was graciouſly returned by the ſtranger; who, with a young man that attended him, retired to the other end of the room. They were no ſooner out of hearing, than the communicative prieſt deſired his company to take particular notice of this perſon to whom he paid his reſpects: "That man," ſaid he, "is this day one of the moſt flagrant inſtances of neglected virtue which the world can produce. Over and above a cool diſcerning head, fraught with uncommon learning and experience, he is poſſeſſed of ſuch fortitude and reſolution, as no difficulties can diſcourage, and no danger impair; and ſo indefatigable in his humanity, that even now, while he is ſurrounded with ſuch embarraſſments as would diſtract the brain of any ordinary mortal, he has added conſiderably to his incumbrances, by taking under his protection that young gentleman; who, induced by his character, appealed to his benevolence for redreſs of the grievances under which he labours from the villainy of his guardian."

Peregrine's curioſity being excited by this encomium, he

he aſked the name of this generous patron, of which when he was informed. "I am no ſtranger," ſaid he, "to the fame of that gentleman, who has made a conſiderable noiſe in the world, on account of that great cauſe he undertook in defence of an unhappy orphan; and ſince he is a perſon of ſuch an amiable diſpoſition, I am heartily ſorry to find that his endeavours have not met with that ſucceſsful iſſue which their good fortune in the beginning ſeemed to promiſe. Indeed, the circumſtance of his eſpouſing that cauſe was ſo uncommon and romantic, and the depravity of the human heart ſo univerſal, that ſome people, unacquainted with his real character, imagined his views were altogether ſelfiſh; and ſome were not wanting, who affirmed he was a mere adventurer. Nevertheleſs, I muſt do him the juſtice to own, I have heard ſome of the moſt virulent of thoſe who were concerned on the other ſide of the queſtion bear teſtimony in his favour; obſerving, that he was deceived into the expence of the whole, by the plauſible ſtory which at firſt engaged his compaſſion. Your deſcription of his character confirms me in the ſame opinion, though I am quite ignorant of the affair; the particulars of which I ſhould be glad to learn, as well as a genuine account of his own life, many circumſtances of which are by his enemies, I believe, egregiouſly miſrepreſented."

"Sir," anſwered the prieſt, "that is a piece of ſatisfaction which I am glad to find myſelf capable of giving you: I have had the pleaſure of being acquainted with Mr. M—— from his youth; and every thing which I ſhall relate concerning him, you may depend upon as a fact which hath fallen under my own cognizance, or been vouched upon the credit of undoubted evidence.

"Mr. M——'s father was a miniſter of the eſtabliſhed church of Scotland, deſcended from a very ancient clan, and his mother nearly related to a noble family in the northern part of that kingdom. While the ſon was boarded at a public ſchool, where he made good progreſs

progreſs in the Latin tongue, his father died, and he was left an orphan to the care of an uncle, who finding him determined againſt any ſervile employment, kept him at ſchool, that he might prepare himſelf for the univerſity, with a view of being qualified for his father's profeſſion.

"Here his imagination was ſo heated by the warlike atchievements he found recorded in the Latin authors, ſuch as Cæſar, Curtius, and Buchanan, that he was ſeized with an irreſiſtible thirſt of military glory, and deſire of trying his fortune in the army. His majeſty's troops taking the field, in conſequence of the rebellion which happened in the year ſeventeen hundred and fifteen, this young adventurer, thinking no life equal to that of a ſoldier, found means to furniſh himſelf with a fuſil and bayonet, and leaving the ſchool, repaired to the camp near Stirling, with a view of ſignalizing himſelf in the field, though he was at that time but juſt turned of thirteen. He offered his ſervice to ſeveral officers, in hopes of being inliſted in their companies; but they would not receive him, becauſe they rightly concluded that he was ſome ſchool boy, broke looſe without the knowledge or conſent of his relations. Notwithſtanding this diſcouragement, he contiuued in camp, curiouſly prying into every part of the ſervice; and ſuch was the reſolution conſpicuous in him, even at ſuch a tender age, that after his ſmall finances were exhauſted, he perſiſted in his deſign; and becauſed he would not make his wants known, actually ſubſiſted for ſeveral days on hips, haws, and ſloes, and other ſpontaneous fruits which he gathered in the woods and fields. Meanwhile, he never failed to be preſent when any regiment or corps of men were drawn out to be exercied and reviewed, and accompanied them in all their evolutions, which he has learned to great perfection, by obſerving the companies which were quartered in the place where he was at ſchool. This eagerneſs and perſeverance attracted the notice of many officers; who, after having commended his ſpirit and zeal, preſſed

ed him to return to his parents, and even threatened to expel him from the camp, if he would not comply with their advice.

"These remonstrances having no other effect than that of warning him to avoid his monitors, they thought proper to alter their behaviour towards him, took him into their protection, and even into their mess; and what, above all other marks of favour, pleased the young soldier most, permitted him to incorporate in the battalion, and take his turn of duty with the other men. In this happy situation he was discovered by a relation of his mother, who was a captain in the army, and who used all his authority and influence in persuading M— to return to school; but finding him deaf to his admonitions and threats, he took him under his own care; and when the army marched to Dumblane, left him at Stirling, with express injunction to keep himself within the walls.

"He temporised with his kinsman, fearing that should he seem refractory, the captain would have ordered him to be shut up in the castle. Inflamed with the desire of seeing a battle, his relation no sooner marched off the ground, than he mixed in with another regiment, to which his former patrons belonged, and proceeded to the field, where he distinguished himself, even at that early time of life, by his gallantry, in helping to retrieve a pair of colours belonging to M—n's regiment; so that after the affair he was presented to the Duke of Argyle, and recommended strongly to Brigadier Grant, who invited him into his regiment, and promised to provide for him with the first opportunity: but that gentleman in a little time lost his command upon the duke's disgrace, and the regiment was ordered for Ireland, being given to Colonel Nassau, whose favour the young volunteer acquired to such a degree, that he was recommended to the king for an ensigncy, which in all probability he would have obtained, had not the regiment been unluckily reduced.

"In consequence of this reduction, which happened in

in the moſt ſevere ſeaſon of the year, he was obliged to return to his own country, through infinite hardſhips, to which he was expoſed from the narrowneſs of his circumſtances: and continuing ſtill enamoured of a military life, he entered into the regiment of Scotch Greys, at that time commanded by the late Sir James Campbell, who being acquainted with his family and character, encouraged him with the promiſe of ſpeedy preferment. In this corps he remained three years, during which he had no opportunity of ſeeing actual ſervice, except at the affair of Glenſheel; and this life of inſipid quiet muſt have hung heavy upon a youth of M—'s active diſpoſition, had not he found exerciſe for the mind, in reading books of amuſement, hiſtory, voyages, and geography, together with thoſe that treated of the art of war, ancient and modern, for which he contracted ſuch an eager appetite, that he uſed to ſpend ſixteen hours a day in this employment. About that time he became acquainted with a gentleman of learning and taſte, who obſerving his indefatigable application, and inſatiable thirſt after knowledge, took upon himſelf the charge of ſuperintending his ſtudies; and by the direction of ſuch an able guide, the young ſoldier converted his attention to a more ſolid and profitable courſe of reading. So inordinate was his deſire of making ſpeedy advances in the paths of learning, that within the compaſs of three months, he diligently peruſed the writings of Locke and Malbranche, and made himſelf maſter of the firſt ſix, and of the eleventh and twelfth book of Euclid's Elements. He conſidered Puſendorf and Grotius with uncommon care, acquired a tolerable degree of knowledge in the French language, and his imagination was ſo captivated with the deſire of learning, that ſeeing no proſpect of a war, or views of being provided for in the ſervice, he quitted the army, and went through a regular courſe of univerſity education. Having made ſome progreſs in his ſtudies, he reſolved to qualify himſelf for the church; and acquired ſuch a ſtock of ſchool divinity under the inſtructions

of a learned profeſſor at Edinburgh, that he more than once mounted the roſtrum in the public hall, and held forth with uncommon applauſe: but being diſcouraged from a proſecution of his plan, by the unreaſonable auſterity of ſome of the Scotch clergy, by whom the moſt indifferent and innocent words and actions were often miſconſtrued into levity and miſconduct, he reſolved to embrace the firſt favourable opportunity of going abroad, being inflamed with the deſire of ſeeing foreign countries, and actually ſet out for Holland, where for the ſpace of two years he ſtudied the Roman law, with the law of nature and nations, under the famous profeſſors Tolieu and Barbeyrac.

"Having thus finiſhed his ſchool education, he ſet out for Paris, with a view to make himſelf perfect in the French language, and learn ſuch uſual exerciſes as might be acquired with the wretched remnant of his ſlender eſtate, which was by that time reduced very low. In his journey through the Netherlands, he went to Namur, and paid his reſpects to Biſhop Strickland and General Collier, by whom he was received with great civility, in conſequence of letters of recommendation, with which he was provided from the Hague, and the old general aſſured him of his protection and intereſt for a pair of colours, if he was diſpoſed to enter into the Dutch ſervice.

"Though he was by that time pretty well cured of his military Quixotiſm, he would not totally decline the generous proffer, for which he thanked him in the moſt grateful terms, telling the general that he would pay his duty to him on his return from France, and then, if he could determine upon re-engaging in the army, ſhould think himſelf highly honoured in being under his command.

"After a ſtay of two months in Flanders, he proceeded to Paris; and, far from taking up his habitation in the ſuburbs of St. Germain, according to the cuſtom of Engliſh travellers, he hired a private lodging on the other ſide of the river, and aſſociated chiefly with

French

French officers, who (their youthful sallies being over) are allowed to be the politest gentlemen of that kingdom. In this scheme he found his account so much, that he could not but wonder at the folly of his countrymen, who lose the main scope of their going abroad, by spending their time and fortune idly with one another.

"During his residence in Holland he had made himself acquainted with the best authors in the French language, so that he was able to share in their conversation; a circumstance from which he found great benefit; for it not only improved him in his knowledge of that tongue, but also tended to the enlargement of his acquaintance, in the course of which he contracted intimacies in some families of good fashion, especially those of the long robe, which would have enabled him to pass his time very agreeably, had he been a little easier in point of fortune: but his finances, notwithstanding the most rigid oeconomy, being in a few months reduced to a very low ebb, the prospect of indigence threw a damp upon all his pleasures, though he never suffered himself to be thereby in any degree dispirited; being in that respect of so happy a disposition, that conscious poverty or abundance made very slight impressions upon his mind.

"This consumption of his cash, however, involved him in some perplexity; and he deliberated with himself, whether he should return to General Collier, or repair to London, where he might possibly fall into some business not unbecoming a gentleman; though he was very much mortified to find himself incapable of gratifying an inordinate desire which possessed him of making the grand tour, or at least of visiting the southern parts of France.

"While he thus hesitated between different suggestions, he was one morning visited by a gentleman who had sought and cultivated his friendship, and for whom he had done a good office, in supporting him with spirit against a brutal German, with whom he had an affair of honour. This gentleman came to propose a

party for a fortnight to Fontainbleau, where the court then was; and the propofal being declined by M— with more than ufual ftiffnefs, his friend was very urgent to know the reafon of his refufal, and at length, with fome confufion, faid, "Perhaps your finances are low." M— replied, that he had wherewithal to defray the expence of his journey to London, where he could be furnifhed with a frefh fupply; and this anfwer was no fooner made, than the other taking him by the hand, "My dear friend," faid he, "I am not unacquainted with your affairs, and would have offered you my credit long ago, if I had thought it would be acceptable; even now, I do not pretend to give you money, but defire and infift upon it, that you will accept of the loan of thefe two pieces of paper, to be repaid when you marry a woman with a fortune of twenty thoufand pounds, or obtain an employment of a thoufand a year." So faying, he prefented him with two actions of above two thoufand livres each.

"M— was aftonifhed at this unexpected inftance of generofity in a ftranger, and with fuitable acknowledgment peremptorily refufed to incur fuch an obligation; but at length he was, by dint of importunity, and warm expoftulation, prevailed upon to accept one of the actions, on condition that the gentleman would take his note for the fum; and this he abfolutely rejected, until M— promifed to draw upon him for double the value or more, in cafe he fhould at any time want a farther fupply. This uncommon act of friendfhip and generofity M— afterwards had an opportunity to repay ten fold; though he could not help regretting the occafion on his friend's account. That worthy man having, by placing too much confidence in a villainous lawyer, and a chain of other misfortunes, involved himfelf and his amiable lady in a labyrinth of difficulties, which threatened the total ruin of his family; M— felt the inexpreffible fatisfaction of delivering his benefactor from the fnare.

"Being thus reinforced by the generofity of his

friend, M— resolved to execute his former plan of seeing the south of France, together with the sea-ports of Spain as far as Cadiz, from whence he proposed to take a passage for London by sea; and with this view, sent forwards his trunks by the diligence to Lyons, determined to ride post, in order to enjoy a better view of the country, and for the conveniency of stopping at those places where there was any thing remarkable to be seen or enquired into. While he was employed in taking leave of his Parisian friends, who furnished him with abundant recommendation, a gentleman of his own country, who spoke little or no French, hearing of his intention, begged the favour of accompanying him in his expedition.

"With this new companion, therefore, he set out for Lyons, where he was perfectly well received by the intendant and some of the best families of the place, in consequence of his letters of recommendation; and after a short stay in that city, proceeded down the Rhone to Avignon, in what is called the *coche d'eau*; then visiting the principal towns of Dauphiné, Languedoc, and Provence, he returned to the delightful city of Marseilles, where he and his fellow-traveller were so much captivated by the serenity of the air, and the good-nature and hospitality of the sprightly inhabitants, that they never dreamed of changing their quarters during the whole winter and part of the spring; here he acquired the acquaintance of the Marquis D'Argens, attorney-general in the Parliament of Aix, and of his eldest son, who now makes so great a figure in the literary world; and when the affair of Father Girad and Madamoiselle Cadiere began to make a noise, he accompanied these two gentlemen to Toulon, where the marquis was ordered to take precognition of the facts.

"On his return to Marseilles, he found a certain noble lord of great fortune under the direction of a Swiss governor, who had accommodated him with two of his own relations, of the same country, by way of companions, together with five servants in his train. They

being abſolute ſtrangers in the place, M— introduced them to the intendant, and ſeveral other good families; and had the good fortune to be ſo agreeable to his lordſhip, that he propoſed and even preſſed him to live with him in England, as a friend and companion, and to take upon him the ſuperintendance of his affairs, in which caſe he would ſettle upon him four hundred a year for life.

"This propoſal was too advantageous to be ſlighted by a perſon of no fortune or fixed eſtabliſhment; he therefore made no difficulty of cloſing with it: but as his lordſhip's departure was fixed to a ſhort day, and he urged him to accompany him to Paris, and from thence to England, M— thought it would be improper and indecent to interfere with the office of his governor, who might take umbrage at his favour, and therefore excuſed himſelf from a compliance with his lordſhip's requeſt, until his minority ſhould be expired, as he was within a few months of being of age. However, he repeated his importunities ſo earneſtly, and the governor joined in the requeſt with ſuch appearance of cordiality, that he was prevailed upon to comply with their joint deſire; and in a few days ſet out with them for Paris, by the way of Lyons. But before they had been three days in the city, M— perceived a total change in the behaviour of the Swiſs and his two relations, who, in all probability, became jealous of his influence with his lordſhip; and he no ſooner made this diſcovery, than he reſolved to withdraw himſelf from ſuch a diſagreeable participation of that young nobleman's favour. He therefore, in ſpite of all his lordſhip's entreaties and remonſtrances, quitted him for the preſent; alledging, as a pretext, that he had a longing deſire to ſee Switzerland and the banks of the Rhine, and promiſing to meet him again in England.

"This his intention being made known to the governor and his friends, their countenances immediately cleared up, their courteſy and complaiſance returned, and they even furniſhed him with letters for Geneva,

Lausanne, Bern, and Soleures; in consequence of which he met with unusual civilities at these places. Having made this tour with his Scotch friend (who came up to him before he left Lyons), and visited the most considerable towns on both sides of the Rhine, and the courts of the Electors Palatine, Mentz, and Cologn, he arrived in Holland; and from thence through the Netherlands repaired to London, where he found my lord just returned from Paris.

"His lordship received him with expressions of uncommon joy, would not suffer him to stir from him for several days, and introduced him to his relations.

"M— accompanied his lordship from London to his country-seat, where he was indeed treated with great friendship and confidence, and consulted in every thing; but the noble peer never once made mention of the annuity which he had promised to settle upon him; nor did M— remind him of it, because he conceived it was his affair to fulfil his engagements of his own accord. M— being tired of the manner of living at this place, made an excursion to Bath, where he staid about a fortnight, to partake of the diversions; and, upon his return, found his lordship making dispositions for another journey to Paris.

"Surprized at this sudden resolution, he endeavoured to dissuade him from it: but his remonstrances were rendered ineffectual by the insinuations of a foreigner who had come over with him, and filled his imagination with extravagant notions of pleasure, infinitely superior to any which he could enjoy while he was in the trammels, and under the restraints of a governor. He therefore turned a deaf ear to all M—'s arguments, and intreated him to accompany him in the journey; but this gentleman forseeing that a young man like my lord, of strong passions and easy to be misled, would in all probability squander away great sums of money, in a way that would neither do credit to himself or to those who were concerned with him, resisted all his solicitations, on pretence of having business of consequence at London:

and

and afterwards had reaſon to be extremely well pleaſed with his own conduct in this particular.

"Before he ſet out on this expedition, M—, in juſtice to himſelf, reminded him of the propoſal which he had made to him at Marſeilles, deſiring to know if he had altered his deſign in that particular; in which caſe he would turn his thoughts ſome other way, as he would not in the leaſt be thought to intrude or pin himſelf upon any man. My lord proteſted, in the moſt ſolemn manner, that he ſtill continued in his former reſolution; and again beſeeching him to bear him company into France, promiſed that every thing ſhould be ſettled to his ſatisfaction upon their return to England. M—, however, ſtill perſiſted in his refuſal, for the abovementioned reaſons: and though he never heard more of the annuity, he nevertheleſs continued to ſerve his lordſhip with his advice and good offices ever after: particularly in directing his choice to an alliance with a lady of eminent virtue, the daughter of a noble lord, more conſpicuous for his ſhining parts than the ſplendor of his titles, (a circumſtance upon which he always reflected with particular ſatisfaction, as well on account of the extraordinary merit of the lady, as becauſe it veſted in her children a conſiderable part of that eſtate, which, of right belonged to her grandmother;) and afterwards put him in a way to retrieve his eſtate from a heavy load of debt he had contracted. When my lord ſet out on his Paris expedition, the money M— had received from his generous friend at Paris was almoſt reduced to the laſt guinea. He had not yet reaped the leaſt benefit from his engagements with his lordſhip; and diſdaining to aſk for a ſupply from him, he knew not how to ſubſiſt, with any degree of credit, till his return.

"This uncomfortable proſpect was the more diſagreeable to him, as, at that time of life, he was much inclined to appear in the gay world, had contracted a taſte for plays, operas, and other public diverſions, and had acquired an acquaintance with many people of good faſhion,

fashion, which could not be maintained without a considerable expence. In this emergency, he thought he could not employ his idle time more profitably than in translating from foreign languages such books as were then chiefly in vogue; and upon application to a friend, who was a man of letters, he was furnished with as much business of that kind as he could possibly manage, and wrote some pamphlets on the reigning controversies of that time that had the good fortune to please. He was also concerned in a monthly journal of literature, and the work was carried on by the two friends jointly, though M— did not at all appear in the partnership. By these means he not only spent his mornings in useful exercise, but supplied himself with money for what the French call the *menus plaisirs* during the whole summer. He frequented all the assemblies in and about London, and considerably enlarged his acquaintance among the fair-sex.

"He had, upon his first arrival in England, become acquainted with a lady at an assembly not far from London; and though, at that time, he had no thoughts of extending his views farther than the usual gallantry of the place, he met with such distinguishing marks of her regard in the sequel, and was so particularly encouraged by the advice of another lady, with whom he had been intimate in France, and who was now of their parties, that he could not help entertaining hopes of making an impression upon the heart of his agreeable partner, who was a young lady of an ample fortune and great expectations. He, therefore, cultivated her good graces with all the assiduity and address of which he was master; and succeeded so well in his endeavours, that, after a due course of attendance, and the death of an aunt, by which she received an accession of fortune to the amount of three-and-twenty thousand pounds, he ventured to declare his passion; and she not only heard him with patience and approbation, but also replied in terms adequate to his warmest wishes.

"Finding himself so favourably received, he pressed

her

her to ſecure his happineſs by marriage; but, to this propoſal, ſhe objected the recency of her kinſwoman's death, which would have rendered ſuch a ſtep highly indecent, and the diſpleaſure of her other relations, from whom ſhe had ſtill greater expectations, and who at that time importuned her to marry a couſin of her own, whom ſhe could not like. However, that M— might have have no cauſe to repine at her delay, ſhe freely entered with him into an intimacy of correſpondence; during which, nothing could have added to their mutual felicity, which was the more poignant and refined, from the myſterious and romantic manner of their enjoying it; for though he publicly viſited her as an acquaintance, his behaviour on theſe occaſions was always ſo diſtant, reſpectful, and reſerved, that the reſt of the company could not poſſibly ſuſpect the nature of their reciprocal attachment; in conſequence of which, they uſed to have private interviews, unknown to every ſoul upon earth except her maid, who was neceſſarily intruſted with the ſecret.

"In this manner they enjoyed the converſation of each other for above twelve months, without the leaſt interruption; and though the ſtability of Mr. M—'s fortune entirely depended upon their marriage, yet as he perceived his miſtreſs ſo averſe to it, he never urged it with vehemence, nor was at all anxious on that ſcore; being eaſily induced to defer a ceremony, which, as he then thought, could in no ſhape have added to their ſatisfaction, though he hath ſince altered his ſentiments.

"Be that as it will, his indulgent miſtreſs, in order to ſet his mind at eaſe in that particular, and in full confidence of his honour, inſiſted on his accepting a deed of gift of her whole fortune, in conſideration of their intended marriage; and, after ſome difficulty, he was prevailed upon to receive this proof of her eſteem, well knowing that it would ſtill be in his power to return the obligation. Though ſhe often intreated him to take upon himſelf the entire adminiſtration of her finances, and upon divers occaſions preſſed him to accept

cept of large ſums, he never once abuſed her generous diſpoſition, or ſolicited her for money, except for ſome humane purpoſe, which ſhe was always more ready to fulfil than he to propoſe.

"In the courſe of this correſpondence, he became acquainted with ſome of her female relations; and, among the reſt, with a young lady, ſo eminently adorned with all the qualifications of mind and perſon, that, notwithſtanding all his philoſophy and caution, he could not behold and converſe with her without being deeply ſmitten with her charms. He did all in his power to diſcourage this dangerous invaſion in the beginning, and to conceal the leaſt ſympton of it from her relation; he ſummoned all his reflection to his aid; and thinking it would be baſe and diſhoneſt to cheriſh any ſentiment repugnant to the affection which he owed to a miſtreſs, who had placed ſuch unlimited confidence in him, he attempted to ſtifle the infant flame, by avoiding the amiable inſpirer of it. But the paſſion had taken too deep a root in his heart to be ſo eaſily extirpated; his abſence from the dear object increaſed the impatience of his love. The inteſtine conflict between that and gratitude, deprived him of his reſt and appetite. He was in a ſhort time emaciated by continual watching, anxiety, and want of nouriſhment; and ſo much altered from his uſual chearfulneſs, that his miſtreſs being ſurprized and alarmed at the change, which from the ſymptoms ſhe judged was owing to ſome uneaſineſs of mind, took all imaginable pains to diſcover the cauſe.

"In all probability, it did not eſcape her penetration; for ſhe more than once aſked if he was in love with her couſin, proteſting, that far from being an obſtacle to his happineſs, ſhe would in that caſe be an advocate for his paſſion. However, this declaration was never made without manifeſt ſigns of anxiety and uneaſineſs, which made ſuch an impreſſion upon the heart of M—, that he reſolved to ſacrifice his happineſs, and even his life, rather than take any ſtep which might be conſtrued into an injury or inſult to a perſon who had treated him with ſuch generoſity and goodneſs.

"In

"In confequence of this refolution, he formed another, which was to go abroad, under pretence of recovering his health, but in reality to avoid the temptation, as well as the fufpicion, of being inconftant; and in this defign he was confirmed by his phyfician, who actually thought him in the firft ftage of a confumption, and therefore advifed him to repair to the fouth of France. He communicated his defign, with the doctor's opinion, to the lady, who agreed to it with much lefs difficulty than he found in conquering his own reluctance at parting with the dear object of his love. The confent of his generous miftrefs being obtained, he waited upon her with the inftrument whereby fhe had made the conveyance of her fortune to him; and all his remonftrances being infufficient to perfuade her to take it back, he cancelled it in her prefence, and placed it in that ftate upon her toilet while fhe was dreffing; whereupon fhe fhed a torrent of tears, faying, fhe now plainly perceived that he wanted to tear himfelf from her, and that his affections were fettled upon another. He was fenfibly affected by this proof of her concern; and endeavoured to calm the perturbation of her mind, by vowing eternal fidelity, and preffing her to accept of his hand in due form before his departure. By thefe means her tranfports were quieted for the prefent, and the marriage deferred, for the fame prudential reafons which had hitherto prevented it.

"Matters being thus compromifed, and the day fixed for his departure, fhe, together with her faithful maid, one morning vifited him for the firft time at his own lodgings; and after breakfaft, defiring to fpeak with him in private, he conducted her into another room, where affuming an unufual gravity of afpect, "My dear M—," faid fhe, "you are now going to leave me, and God alone knows if ever we fhall meet again; therefore, if you really love me with that tendernefs which you profefs, you will accept of this mark of my friendfhip and unalterable affection: it will at leaft be a provifion for your journey; and if any accident

dent ſhould befal me before I have the happineſs of receiving you again into my arms, I ſhall have the ſatisfaction of knowing that you are not altogether without reſource." So ſaying, ſhe put an embroidered pocket-book into his hand. He expreſſed the high ſenſe he had of her generoſity and affection in the moſt pathetic terms, and begged leave to ſuſpend his acceptance, until he ſhould know the contents of her preſent, which was ſo extraordinary, that he abſolutely refuſed to receive it: he was, however, by her repeated intreaties, in a manner compelled to receive about one half, and ſhe afterwards inſiſted upon his taking a reinforcement of a conſiderable ſum for the expence of his journey.

"Having ſtaid with her ten days beyond the time he had fixed for his departure, and ſettled the method of their correſpondence, he took his leave with a heart full of ſorrow, anxiety, and diſtraction, produced from the different ſuggeſtions of his duty and love. He then ſet out for France, and after a ſhort ſtay at Paris proceeded to Aix in Provence, and from thence to Marſeilles, at which two places he continued for ſome months; but nothing he met with being able to diſſipate thoſe melancholy ideas which ſtill preyed upon his imagination, and affected his ſpirits, he endeavoured to elude them with a ſucceſſion of new objects; and with that view, perſuaded a counſellor of the parliament of Aix, a man of great worth, learning, and good-humour, to accompany him in making a tour of thoſe parts of France which he had not yet ſeen. On their return from this excurſion, they found at Aix an Italian Abbe, a perſon of character, and great knowledge of men and books; who having travelled all over Germany and France, was ſo far on his return to his own country.

"M— having, by means of his friend the counſellor, contracted an acquaintance with this gentleman, and being deſirous of ſeeing ſome parts of Italy, particularly the carnival at Venice, they ſet out together from Marſeilles, in a tartan, for Genoa, coaſting it all the way, and lying on ſhore every night. Having

ſhewn him what was moſt remarkable in this city, his friend the Abbe was ſo obliging, as to conduct him through Tuſcany, and the moſt remarkable cities in Lombardy, to Venice, where M— inſiſted upon defraying the expence of the whole tour, in conſideration the Abbe's complaiſance, which had been of infinite ſervice to him, in the courſe of this expedition. Having remained five weeks at Venice, he was preparing to ſet out for Rome with ſome Engliſh gentlemen whom he had met by accident, when he was all of a ſudden obliged to change his reſolution by ſome diſagreeable letters which he received from London. He had, from his firſt departure, correſponded with his generous, though inconſtant miſtreſs, with a religious exactneſs and punctuality; nor was ſhe, for ſome time, leſs obſervant of the agreement they had made. Nevertheleſs ſhe, by degrees, became ſo negligent and cold in her expreſſion, and ſo ſlack in her correſpondence, that he could not help obſerving and upbraiding her with ſuch indifference; and her endeavours to palliate it were ſupported by pretexts ſo frivolous, as to be eaſily ſeen through by a lover of very little diſcernment.

"While he tortured himſelf with conjectures about the cauſe of this unexpected change, he received ſuch intelligence from England, as when joined with what he himſelf had perceived, by her manner of writing, left him little or no room to doubt of her fickleneſs and incontinency. Nevertheleſs, as he knew by experience, that informations of that kind are not to be entirely relied upon, he reſolved to be more certainly apprized; and for that end, departed immediately for London by the way of Tirol, Bavaria, Alſace, and Paris.

"On his arrival in England, he learned, with infinite concern, that his intelligence had not been at all exaggerated; and his ſorrow was inexpreſſible, to find a perſon, endowed with ſo many other noble and amiable qualities, ſeduced into an indiſcretion, that of neceſſity ruined the whole plan which had been concerted between them for their mutual happineſs. She made ſe-

veral

veral attempts, by letters and interviews, to palliate her conduct, and soften him into a reconciliation; but his honour being concerned, he remained deaf to all her intreaties and proposals. Nevertheless, I have often heard him say that he could not help loving her, and revering the memory of a person to whose generosity and goodness he owed his fortune, and one whose foibles were overbalanced by a thousand good qualities. He often insisted on making restitution, but far from complying with that proposal, she afterwards often endeavoured to lay him under yet greater obligations of the same kind, and importuned him, with the warmest solicitations, to renew their former correspondence, which he as often declined.

"M— took this instance of the inconstancy of the sex so much to heart, that he had almost resolved, for the future, to keep clear of all engagements for life, and returned to Paris in order to dissipate his anxiety, where he hired an apartment in one of the academies, in the exercises whereof he took singular delight. During his residence at this place, he had the good fortune to ingratiate himself with a great general, a descendant of one of the most ancient and illustrious families in France; having attracted his notice by some remarks he had written on Folard's Polybius, which were accidentally shewn to that great man by one of his aids de camp, who was a particular friend of M—. The favour he had thus acquired, was strengthened by his assiduities and attention. Upon his return to London, he sent some of Handel's newest compositions to the prince, who was particularly fond of that gentleman's productions; together with Clark's edition of Cæsar; and in the spring of the same year, before the French army took the field, he was honoured with a most obliging letter from the prince, inviting him to come over, if he wanted to see the operations of the campaign, and desiring he would give himself no trouble about his equipage.

"M— having still some remains of a military dispo-

ſition, and conceiving this to be a more favourable opportunity than any he ſhould ever meet with again, readily embraced the offer, and ſacrificed the ſoft delights of love, which at that time he enjoyed without controul, to an eager, laborious, and dangerous curioſity. In that and the following campaign, during which he was preſent at the ſiege of Philipſburg, and ſeveral other actions, he enlarged his acquaintance among the French officers, eſpecially thoſe of the graver ſort, who had a taſte for books and literature; and the friendſhip and intereſt of thoſe gentlemen were afterwards of ſingular ſervice to him, though in an affair altogether foreign from their profeſſion.

"He had all along made diligent enquiry into the trade and manufactures of the countries through which he had occaſion to travel, more particularly thoſe of Holland, England, and France; and as he was well acquainted with the revenue and farms of this laſt kingdom, he ſaw with concern the great diſadvantages under which our tobacco trade (the moſt conſiderable branch of our commerce with that people) was carried on; what inconſiderable returns were made to the planters, out of the low price given by the French company; and how much it was in the power of that company to reduce it ſtill lower. M—— had formed a ſcheme to remedy this evil, ſo far as it related to the national loſs or gain, by not permitting the duty of one penny in the pound, old ſubſidy, to be drawn back on tobacco re-exported. He demonſtrated to the miniſtry of that time, that ſo inconſiderable a duty could not in the leaſt diminiſh the demand from abroad, which was the only circumſtance to be apprehended, and that the yearly produce of that revenue would amount to one hundred and twenty thouſand pounds, without one ſhilling additional expence to the publick; but the miniſtry having the exciſe ſcheme then in contemplation, could think of no other till that ſhould be tried; and that project having miſcarried, he renewed his application, when they approved of his ſcheme in

every

every particular, but diſcovered a ſurprizing backwardneſs to carry it into execution.

"His expectations in this quarter being diſappointed, he, by the interpoſition of his friends, preſented a plan to the French company, in which he ſet forth the advantages that would accrue to themſelves from fixing the price, and ſecuring that ſort of tobacco which beſt ſuited the taſte of the publick and their manufacture: and finally propoſed to furniſh them with any quantity, at the price which they paid in the port of London.

"After ſome diſpute, they agreed to his propoſal, and contracted with him for fifteen thouſand hogſheads a year, for which they obliged themſelves to pay ready money, on its arrival in any one or more convenient ports in the ſouth or weſtern coaſts of Great Britain that he ſhould pleaſe to fix upon for that purpoſe. M—— no ſooner obtained this contract, than he immediately ſet out for America, in order to put it in execution; and, by way of companion, carried with him a little French abbé, a man of humour, wit, and learning, with whom he had been long acquainted, and for whom he had done many good offices.

"On his arrival at Virginia, which opportunely happened at a time when all the gentlemen were aſſembled in the capital of that province, he publiſhed a memorial, repreſenting the diſadvantages under which their trade was carried on; the true method of redreſſing their own grievances in that reſpect; and propoſing to contract with them for the yearly quantity of fifteen thouſand hogſheads of ſuch tobacco as was fit for the French market, at the price which he demonſtrated to be conſiderably greater than that which they had formerly received.

"This remonſtrance met with all the ſucceſs and encouragement he could expect; the principal planters, ſeeing their own intereſt concerned, readily aſſented to the propoſal, which, through their influence, was alſo reliſhed by the reſt; and the only difficulty that re-

mained related to the ſecurity for payment of the bills on the arrival of the tobacco in England, and to the time ſtipulated for the continuance of the contract.

" In order to remove theſe objections, Mr. M—— returned to Europe, and found the French company of farmers diſpoſed to agree to every thing he deſired for facilitating the execution of the contract, and perfectly well pleaſed with the ſample which he had already ſent; but his good friend the abbé, (whom he had left behind him in America) by an unparalleled piece of treachery, found means to overturn the whole project. He ſecretly wrote a memorial to the company, importing, that he found by experience M—— could afford to furniſh them at a much lower price than that which they had agreed to give; and that, by being in poſſeſſion of the contract for five years, as was intended according to the propoſal, he would have the company ſo much in his power, that they muſt afterwards ſubmit to any price he ſhould pleaſe to impoſe; and that if they thought him worthy of ſuch a truſt, he would undertake to furniſh them at an eaſier rate, in conjunction with ſome of the leading men in Virginia and Maryland, with whom he ſaid he had already concerted meaſures for that purpoſe.

" The company were ſo much alarmed at theſe inſinuations, that they declined complying with Mr. Mr. M——'s demands until the abbé's return; and though they afterwards uſed all their endeavours to perſuade him to be concerned with that little traitor in his undertaking (by which he might ſtill have been a very conſiderable gainer) he reſiſted all their ſolicitations, and plainly told them in the abbé's preſence, that he would never proſtitute his own principles ſo far, as to enter into engagements of any kind with a perſon of his character, much leſs in a ſcheme that had a manifeſt tendency to lower the market price of tobacco in England.

" Thus ended a project the moſt extenſive, ſimple, and eaſy, and (as appeared by the trial made) the beſt calculated

calculated to raiſe an immenſe fortune, of any that was ever undertaken or planned by a private perſon; a project, in the execution of which M—— had the good of the publick, and the glory of putting in a flouriſhing condition that valuable branch of our trade, (which gives employment to two great provinces, and above two hundred ſail of ſhips) much more at heart than his own private intereſt. It was reaſonable to expect, that a man whoſe debts M—— had paid more than once, whom he had obliged in many other reſpects, and whom he had carried with him at a very conſiderable expence on this expedition, merely with a view of bettering his fortune, would have acted with common honeſty, if not with gratitude; but ſuch was the depravity of this little monſter's heart, that on his death-bed he left a conſiderable fortune to mere ſtrangers, with whom he had little or no connection, without the leaſt thought of refunding the money advanced for him by M——, in order to prevent his rotting in a gaol.

"When M—— had once obtained a command of money, he, by his knowledge in ſeveral branches of trade, as well as by the aſſiſtance of ſome intelligent friends at Paris and London, found means to employ it to very good purpoſe; and had he been a man of that ſelfiſh diſpoſition, which too much prevails in the world, he might have been at this day maſter of a very ample fortune; but his ear was never deaf to the voice of diſtreſs, nor his beneficent heart ſhut againſt the calamities of his fellow-creatures. He was even ingenious in contriving the moſt delicate methods of relieving modeſt indigence, and, by his induſtrious benevolence, often anticipated the requeſts of miſery.

"I could relate a number of examples to illuſtrate my aſſertions, in ſome of which you would perceive the moſt diſintereſted generoſity; but ſuch a detail would treſpaſs too much upon your time, and I do not pretend to dwell upon every minute circumſtance of his conduct. Let it ſuffice to ſay, that upon the declaration of war with Spain, he gave up all his commercial

ſchemes,

ſchemes, and called in his money from all quarters, with a view of ſitting down for the reſt of his life contented with what he had got, and reſtraining his liberalities to what he could ſpare from his yearly income. This was a very prudential reſolution, could he have kept it; but, upon the breaking out of the war, he could not without concern ſee many gentlemen of merit, who had been recommended to him, diſappointed of commiſſions, merely for want of money to ſatisfy the expectations of the commiſſion-brokers of that time; and therefore launched out conſiderable ſums for them on their bare notes, great part whereof was loſt by the death of ſome in the unfortunate expedition to the Weſt Indies.

"He at length, after many other actions of the like nature, from motives of pure humanity, love of juſtice, and abhorrence of oppreſſion, embarked in a cauſe, every way the moſt important that ever came under the diſcuſſion of the courts of law in theſe kingdoms; whether it be conſidered in relation to the extraordinary nature of the caſe, or the immenſe property of no leſs than fifty thouſand pounds a year, and three peerages, that depended upon it.

"In the year 1740, the brave admiral who at that time commanded his majeſty's fleet in the Weſt Indies, among the other tranſactions of his ſquadron tranſmitted to the Duke of Newcaſtle, mentioned a young man, who though in the capacity of a common ſailor on board one of the ſhips under his command, laid claim to the eſtate and titles of the Earl of A——. Theſe pretenſions were no ſooner communicated in the publick papers, than they became the ſubject of converſation in all companies; and the perſon whom they chiefly affected, being alarmed at the appearance of a competitor, though at ſuch diſtance, began to put himſelf in motion, and take all the precautions which he thought neceſſary to defeat the endeavour of the young upſtart. Indeed the early intelligence he received of Mr. A—y's making himſelf known in the Weſt Indies, furniſhed him

him with numberless advantages over that unhappy young gentleman: for being in possession of a plentiful fortune, and lord of many manors in the neighbourhood of the very place where the claimant was born, he knew all the witnesses who could give the most material evidence of his legitimacy; and, if his probity did not restrain him, had, by his power and influence, sufficient opportunity and means of applying to the passions and interests of the witnesses, to silence many, and gain over others to his side; which his competitor, by an absence of fifteen or sixteen years from his native country, the want of education and friends, together with his present helpless situation, was rendered absolutely incapable of taking any step for his own advantage. And although his worthy uncle's conspicuous virtue and religious regard for justice and truth might possibly be an unconquerable restraint to his taking any undue advantages, yet the consciences of that huge army of emissaries he kept in pay, were not altogether so very tender and scrupulous. This much, however, may be said, without derogation from or impeachment of the noble earl's nice virtue and honour, that he took care to compromise all differences with the other branches of the family, whose interests were, in this affair, connected with his own, by sharing the estate with them, and also retained most of the eminent council within the bar of both kingdoms against this formidable bastard, before any suit was instituted by him.

While he was thus entrenching himself against the attack of a poor forlorn youth, at the distance of fifteen hundred leagues, continually exposed to the dangers of the sea, the war, and an unhealthy climate, Mr. M—, in the common course of conversation, chanced to ask some questions relating to this romantick pretender of one H——, who was at that time the present Lord A——y's chief agent. This man, when pressed, could not help owning the late Lord A——m actually left a son, who had been spirited away into America, soon after

ter his father's death, but ſaid he did not know whether this was the ſame perſon.

"This information could not fail to make an impreſſion on the humanity of Mr. M——, who being acquainted with the genius of the wicked party who had poſſeſſed themſelves of this unhappy young man's eſtate and honours, expreſſed no ſmall anxiety and apprehenſion leſt they ſhould take him off by ſome means or other; and, even then, ſeemed diſpoſed to contribute towards the ſupport of the friendleſs orphan, and to enquire more circumſtantially into the nature of his claim. In the mean time, his occaſions called him to France; and during his abſence, Mr. A——y arrived in London in the month of October 1741."

Here the clergyman was interrupted by Peregrine, who ſaid there was ſomething ſo extraordinary, not to call it improbable, in the account he had heard of the young gentleman's being ſent into exile, that he would look upon himſelf as infinitely obliged to the doctor, if he would favour him with a true repreſentation of that tranſaction, as well as of the manner in which he arrived and was known at the iſland of Jamaica.

The parſon, in compliance with our hero's requeſt, taking up the ſtory from the beginning, "Mr A——y," ſaid he, "is ſon of Arthur late Lord Baron of A——m, by his wife Mary Sh——d, natural daughter to John Duke of B—— and N——by, whom he publicly married on the 21ſt day of July 1706, contrary to the inclination of his mother and all his other relations, particularly of Arthur late Earl of A——y, who bore an implacable enmity to the duke her father, and for that reaſon did all that lay in his power to traverſe the marriage: but finding his endeavours ineffectual, he was ſo much offended, that he would never be perfectly reconciled to Lord A——m, though he was his preſumptive heir. After their nuptials, they cohabited together in England for the ſpace of two or three years; during which ſhe miſcarried more than once; and he being a man of levity, and an extravagant diſpoſition,

not

not only ſquandered away all that he had received of his wife's fortune, but alſo contracted many conſiderable debts, which obliged him to make a precipitate retreat into Ireland, leaving his lady behind him in the houſe with his mother and ſiſter; who, having alſo been averſe to the match, had always looked upon her with eyes of diſguſt.

"It was not likely that harmony ſhould long ſubſiſt in this family, eſpecially as Lady A——m was a woman of a lofty ſpirit, who could not tamely bear inſults and ill-uſage, from perſons who, ſhe had reaſon to believe, were her enemies at heart. Accordingly a miſunderſtanding ſoon happened among them, which was fomented by the malice of one of her ſiſters-in-law: divers ſcandalous reports of her miſconduct, to which the empty pretenſions of a vain, wretched coxcomb, (who was made uſe of as an infamous tool for that purpoſe) gave a colourable pretext, were trumped up, and tranſmitted, with many falſe and aggravating circumſtances, to her huſband in Ireland, who being a giddy, unthinking man, was ſo much incenſed at theſe inſinuations, that, in the firſt tranſports of his paſſion, he ſent to his mother a power of attorney, that ſhe might ſue for a divorce in his behalf. A libel was thereupon exhibited, containing many ſcandalous allegations, void of any real foundation in truth; but being unſupported by any manner of proof, it was at length diſmiſſed with coſts, after it had depended upwards of two years.

"Lord A——m finding himſelf abuſed by the miſrepreſentations of his mother and ſiſter, diſcovered an inclination to be reconciled to his lady: in conſequence of which, ſhe was ſent over to Dublin by her father, to the care of a gentleman in that city; in whoſe houſe ſhe was received by her huſband, with all the demonſtrations of love and eſteem. From thence he conducted her to his lodgings, and then to his country houſe, where ſhe had the misfortune to ſuffer a miſcarriage, through fear and reſentment of my lord's behaviour, which was often brutal and indecent. From the country

they

they removed to Dublin about the latter end of July, or beginning of August 1714, where they had not long continued, when her ladyship was known to be again with child.

"Lord A——m and his issue being next in remainder to the honours and estate of Arthur Earl of A——a, was extremely solicitous to have a son; and, warned by the frequent miscarriages of his lady, resolved to curb the natural impatience and rusticity of his disposition, that she might not, as formerly, suffer by his outrageous conduct. He accordingly cherished her with uncommon tenderness and care; and her pregnancy being pretty far advanced, conducted her to his country-seat, where she was delivered of Mr. A——y, about the latter end of April or beginning of May; for none of the witnesses have been able, at this distance, with absolute certainty to fix the precise time of his birth, and there was no register kept in the parish: as an additional misfortune, no gentleman of fashion lived in that parish; nor did those who lived at any considerable distance care to cultivate an acquaintance with a man of Lord A——m's strange conduct.

"Be that as it will, the occasion was celebrated by his lordship's tenants and dependants upon the spot, and in the neighbouring town of New R—ss, by bonfires, illuminations, and other rejoicings; which have made such an impression upon the minds of the people, that in the place where they happened, and the contiguous parishes, several hundred persons have already declared their knowledge and remembrance of this event, in spite of the great power of the claimant's adversary in that quarter, and the great pains and indirect methods taken by his numberless agents and emissaries, as well as by those who are interested with him in the event of the suit, to corrupt and suppress the evidence.

"Lord A——m, after the birth of his son, who was sent to nurse in the neighbourhood, according to the custom of the country, (where people of the highest distinction

distinction put their children out to nurse into farm-houses and cabbins) lived in harmony with his lady for the space of two years: but having by his folly and extravagance reduced himself to great difficulties, he demanded the remainder of her fortune from her father the Duke of B——, who absolutely refused to part with a shilling until a proper settlement should be made on his daughter, which by that time he had put out of his own power to make by his folly and extravagance.

"As her ladyship, by her endeavours to reform the œconomy of her house, had incurred the displeasure of some idle, profligate fellows, who had fastened themselves upon her husband, and helped to consume his substance, they seized this opportunity of the duke's refusal; and in order to be revenged upon the innocent lady, persuaded Lord A——m, that the only means of extracting money from his grace would be to turn her away, on pretence of infidelity to his bed, for which, they hinted, there was but too much foundation. At their suggestions, a most infamous plan was projected; in the execution of which one P——, a poor, unbred, simple, country booby, whom they had decoyed into a snare, lost one of his ears, and the injured lady retired the same day to New R—ss, where she continued several years. She did not, however, leave the house, without struggling hard to carry her child along with her; but far from enjoying such indulgence, strict orders were given, that the boy should not for the future be brought within her sight. This base, inhuman treatment, instead of answering the end proposed, produced such a contrary effect, that the Duk of B——, by a codicil to his will, in which he reflects upon Lord A——m's evil temper, directed his executors to pay to his daughter an annuity of one hundred pounds, while her lord and she should continue to live separate; and this allowance was to cease on Lord A——m's death.

"While she remained in this solitary situation, the

child was universally known and received as the legitimate son and heir of her lord, whose affection for the boy was so conspicuous, that in the midst of his own necessities, he never failed to maintain him in the dress and equipage of a young nobleman. In the course of his infancy, his father having often changed his place residence, the child was put under the instructions of a great many different schoolmasters, so that he was perfectly well known in a great many different parts of the kingdom; and his mother seized all opportunities (which were but rare, on account of his father's orders to the contrary) of seeing and giving him proofs of her maternal tenderness, until she set out for England, after having been long in a declining state of health by a paralytical disorder; upon the consequence of which, such dependence was placed by her inconsiderate husband, who was by this time reduced to extreme poverty, that he actually married a woman whom he had long kept as a mistress. This creature no sooner understood that Lady A—— m was departed from Ireland, than she openly avowed her marriage, and went about publickly with Lord A——m, visiting his acquaintance in the character of his wife.

"From this æra may be dated the beginning of Mr. A——y's misfortunes: this artful woman, who had formerly treated the child with an appearance of fondness, in order to ingratiate herself with the father, now looking upon herself as sufficiently established in the family, thought it was high time to alter her beviour with regard to the unfortunate boy; and accordingly, for obvious reasons, employed a thousand artifices to alienate the heart of the weak father from his unhappy offspring: yet, notwithstanding all her insinuations, nature still maintained her influence in his heart; and though she often found means to irritate him by artful and malicious accusations, his resentment never extended farther than fatherly correction. She would have found it impossible to accomplish his ruin, had not her efforts been reinforced by a new auxiliary,

liary, who was no other than his uncle, the prefent ufurper of his title and eftate; yet even this confederacy was over-awed, in fome meafure, by the fear of alarming the unfortunate mother, until her diftemper increafed to a moft deplorable degree of the dead palfy, and the death of her father had reduced her to a moft forlorn and abject ftate of diftrefs. Then they ventured upon the execution of their projects; and (though their aims were widely different) concurred in their endeavours to remove the haplefs boy, as the common obftacle to both.

"Lord A——m, who (as I have already obferved) was a man of weak intellects, and utterly void of any fixed principle of action, being by this time reduced to fuch a pitch of mifery, that he was often obliged to pawn his wearing-apparel in order to procure the common neceffaries of life; and having no other fund remaining, with which he could relieve his prefent neceffities, except a fale of the reverfion of the A——a eftate, to which the nonage of his fon was an effectual bar, he was advifed by his virtuous brother, and the reft of his counfellors, to furmount this difficulty by fecreting his fon, and fpreading a report of his death. This honeft project he the more readily embraced, becaufe he knew that no act of his could fruftrate the child's fucceffion. Accordingly, the boy was removed from the fchool at which he was boarded, to the houfe of one K—gh, an agent and accomplice of the prefent Earl of A——a, where he was kept feveral months clofely confined; and in the mean time it was induftrioufly reported that he was dead.

"This previous meafure being taken, Lord A—m publifhed advertifements in the Gazettes, offering reverfions of the A——a eftate to fale; and emiffaries of various kinds were employed, to inveigle fuch as were innocent of the nature of the fettlement of thefe eftates, or ftrangers to the affairs of his family. Some people, impofed upon by the report of the child's death, were drawn in to purchafe, thinking themfelves fafe in the

concurrence of his lordſhip's brother, upon preſumption that he was next in remainder to the ſucceſſion; others, tempted by the ſmallneſs of the price, (which rarely exceeded half a year's purchaſe, as appears by many deeds) though they doubted the truth of the boy's being dead, ran ſmall riſks on the contingency of his dying before he ſhould be of age, or in hope of his being prevailed upon to confirm the grants of his father; and many more were treating with him on the ſame notions, when their tranſactions were ſuddenly interrupted, and the ſcheme of raiſing more money for the preſent defeated by the unexpected appearance of the boy, who being naturally ſprightly and impatient of reſtraint, had found means to break from his confinement, and wandered up and down the ſtreets of Dublin, avoiding his father's houſe, and chuſing to encounter all ſorts of diſtreſs, rather than ſubject himſelf again to the cruelty and malice of the woman who ſupplied his mother's place. Thus debarred his father's protection, and deſtitute of any fixed habitation, he herded with all the looſe, idle, and diſorderly youths in Dublin, ſkulking chiefly about the college, ſeveral members and ſtudents of which taking pity on his misfortunes, ſupplied him at different times with cloaths and money. In this unſettled and uncomfortable way of life did he remain from the year 1725 to the latter end of November 1727, at which time his father died ſo miſerably poor, that he was actually buried at the publick expence.

"This unfortunate nobleman was no ſooner dead, than his brother Richard, now Earl of A——a, taking advantage of the nonage and helpleſs ſituation of his nephew, ſeized upon all the papers of the defunct, and afterwards uſurped the title of Lord A——m, to the ſurprize of the ſervants and others who were acquainted with the affairs of the family. This uſurpation, bold as it was, produced no other effect than that of his being inſulted by the populace as he went through the ſtreets, and the refuſal of the king at arms

to

to enrol the certificate of his brother's having died without issue. The first of these inconveniencies he bore without any sense of shame, though not without repining, conscious that it would gradually vanish with the novelty of his invasion; and as to the last, he conquered it by means well known and obvious.

"Nor will it seem strange, that he should thus invade the rights of an orphan with impunity, if people will consider, that the late Lord A——m had not only squandered away his fortune with the most ridiculous extravagance, but also associated himself with low company, so that he was little known, and less regarded, by persons of any rank and figure in life; and his child, of consequence, debarred of the advantages which might have accrued from valuable connections. And though it was universally known that Lady A——m had a son in Ireland, such was the obscurity in which the father had lived during the last years of his life, that few of the nobility could be supposed to be acquainted with the particular circumstances of a transaction in which they had no concern, and which had happened at the distance of twelve years before the date of this usurpation. Moreover, as their first information was no other than common fame, the publick clamour occasioned by the separation might inspire such as were strangers to the family affairs with a mistaken notion of the child's having been born about or after the time of that event. The hurry and bustle occasioned by the arrival of the lord lieutenant about this period, the reports industriously propagated of the claimant's death, the obscurity and concealment in which the boy was obliged to live in order to elude the wicked attempts of his uncle, might also contribute to his peaceable enjoyment of an empty title: and, lastly, Lord Chancellor W——m, whose immediate province it was to issue writs for Parliament, was an utter stranger in Ireland, unacquainted with the descents of families, and consequently did not examine farther than the certificate enrolled in the books of the king at arms.

Over and above these circumstances, which naturally account for the success of the imposture, it may be observed, that the hapless youth had not one relation alive, on the side of his father, whose interest it was not to forward or connive at his destruction; that his grandfather the Duke of B—— was dead; and that his mother was then in England, in a forlorn, destitute, dying condition, secreted from the world, and even from her own relations, by her woman Mary H——, who had a particular interest to secrete her, and altogether dependant upon a miserable and precarious allowance from the Duchess of B——, to whose caprice she was moreover a most wretched slave.

"Notwithstanding these concurring circumstances in favour of the usurper, he did not think himself secure while the orphan had any chance of finding a friend who would undertake his cause; and therefore laid a plan for his being kidnapped, and sent to America as a slave. His coadjutor in this humane scheme was a person who carried on the trade of transporting servants to our plantations, and was deeply interested on this occasion, having for a mere trifle purchased of the late Lord A——m the reversion of a considerable part of the A——d estate; which shameful bargain was confirmed by the brother, but could never take place unless the boy could be effectually removed.

"Every thing being settled with this auxiliary, several ruffians were employed in search of the unhappy victim; and the first attempt that was made upon him, in which his uncle personally assisted, happening near one of the great markets of the city of Dublin, an honest butcher, with the assistance of his neighbours, rescued him by force from their cruel hands. This, however, was but a short respite; for (though warned by this adventure, the boy seldom crept out of his lurking places without the most cautious circumspection) he was, in March 1728, discovered by the diligence of his persecutors, and forcibly dragged on board of a ship bound for Newcastle on Delaware river in America,

where

where he was sold as a slave, and kept to hard labour, much above his age, or strength, for the space of thirteen years, during which he was transferred from one person to another.

"While he remained in this servile situation, he often mentioned, to those in whom he thought such confidence might be placed, the circumstances of his birth and title, together with the manner of his being exiled from his native country; although in this particular he neglected a caution which he had received in his passage, importing that such a discovery would cost him his life. Meanwhile the usurper quietly enjoyed his right: and to those who questioned him about his brother's son, constantly replied, that the boy had been dead for several years. And Arthur Earl of A——a dying in April 1737, he, upon pretence of being next heir, succeeded to the honours and estate of that nobleman.

The term of the nephew's bondage, which had been lengthened out beyond the usual time, on account of his repeated attempts to escape, being expired in the year 1740, he hired himself as a common sailor in a trading vessel bound to Jamaica; and there, being entered on board of one of his majesty's ships under the command of Admiral Vernon, openly declared his parentage and pretensions. This extraordinary claim, which made a great noise in the fleet, reaching the ears of one Lieutenant S——n, nearly related to the usurper's Irish wife, he believed the young gentleman to be an impostor; and thinking it was incumbent on him to discover the cheat, he went on board the ship to which the claimant belonged, and having heard the account which he gave of himself, was, notwithstanding his prepossessions, convinced of the truth of what he alledged. On his return to his own ship, he chanced to mention this extraordinary affair upon the quarter-deck, in the hearing of Mr. B——n, one of the midshipmen, who had formerly been at school with Mr. A——y. This young gentleman not only told the lieutenant that

he

he had been ſchool-fellow with Lord A——m's ſon, but alſo declared that he ſhould know him again, if not greatly altered, as he ſtill retained a perfect idea of his countenance.

"Upon this intimation, the lieutenant propoſed that the experiment ſhould be tried; and went with the midſhipman on board the ſhip that the claimant was in, for that purpoſe. After all the ſailors had aſſembled upon deck, Mr. B——n, caſting his eyes around, immediately diſtinguiſhed Mr. A——y in the crowd, and laying his hand on his ſhoulder—"This is the man!" ſaid he; affirming at the ſame time, that while he continued at ſchool with him, the claimant was reputed and reſpected as Lord A——m's ſon and heir, and maintained in all reſpects ſuitable to the dignity of his rank. Nay, he was, in like manner, recognized by ſeveral other perſons in the fleet, who had known him in his infancy.

"Theſe things being reported to the admiral, he generouſly ordered him to be ſupplied with neceſſaries, and treated like a gentleman; and, in his next diſpatches, tranſmitted an account of the affair to the Duke of Newcaſtle, among the other tranſactions of the fleet.

In September or October, 1741, Mr. A——y arrived in London; and the firſt perſon to whom he applied for advice and aſſiſtance was a man of the law, nearly related to the families of A——a and A——m, and well acquainted with the particular affairs of each; who far from treating him as a baſtard and impoſtor, received him with civility and ſeeming kindneſs, aſked him to eat, preſented him with a piece of money, and excuſing himſelf from meddling in the affair, adviſed him to go to Ireland, as the moſt proper place for commencing a ſuit for the recovery of his right.

"Before the young gentleman had an opportunity, or indeed any inclination to comply with this advice, he was accidentally met in the ſtreet by that ſame H—n, who, as I have mentioned, gave Mr. M——r the firſt inſight

inſight into the affair; this man immediately knew the claimant, having been formerly an agent for his father, and afterwards a creature of his uncle's, with whom he was, not without reaſon, ſuſpected to be concerned in kidnapping and tranſporting his nephew. Be that as it will, his connexions with the uſurper were now broke off by a quarrel, in conſequence of which he had thrown up his agency; and he invited the hapleſs ſtranger to his houſe, with a view of making all poſſible advantage of ſuch a gueſt.

"There he had not long remained, when his treacherous landlord, tampering with his inexperience, effected a marriage between him and the daughter of one of his own friends, who lodged in his houſe at the ſame time: but afterwards, ſeeing no perſon of conſequence willing to eſpouſe his cauſe, he looked upon him as an incumbrance, and wanted to rid his hands of him accordingly. He remembered that Mr. M——r had expreſſed himſelf with all the humanity of apprehenſion in favour of the unfortunate young nobleman, before his arrival in England; and being well acquainted with the generoſity of his diſpoſition, he no ſooner underſtood that he was returned from France, than he waited upon him with an account of Mr. A——y's being ſafely arrived. Mr. M——r was ſincerely rejoiced to find that a perſon who had been ſo cruelly injured, and undergone ſo long and continued a ſcene of diſtreſs, was reſtored to a country where he was ſure of obtaining juſtice, and where every good man (as he imagined) would make the cauſe his own: and, being informed that the youth was in want of neceſſaries, he gave twenty guineas to H——n for his uſe, and promiſed to do him all the ſervice in his power; but had no intention to take upon himſelf the whole weight of ſuch an important affair, or indeed to appear in the cauſe, until he ſhould be fully and thoroughly ſatisfied that the claimant's pretenſions were well founded.

"In the mean time, H——n inſinuating that the young gentleman was not ſafe in his preſent lodging

from the machinations of his enemies, M——r accommodated him with an apartment in his own houſe; where he was at great pains to remedy the defect in his education, by rendering him fit to appear as a gentleman in the world. Having received from him all the intelligence he could give, relating to his own affair, he laid the caſe before counſel, and diſpatched a perſon to Ireland, to make farther enquiries upon the ſame ſubject; who, on his firſt arrival in that kingdom, found the claimant's birth was as publickly known as any circumſtance of that kind could poſſibly be at ſo great a diſtance of time.

" The uſurper and his friends gave all the interruption in their power to any reſearches concerning that affair; and had recourſe to every art and expedient that could be invented, to prevent its being brought to a legal diſcuſſion: privilege bills in chancery, orders of court ſurreptitiouſly and illegally obtained, and every other invention was made uſe of to bar and prevent a fair and honeſt trial by a jury. The uſurper himſelf and his agents, at the ſame time that they formed divers conſpiracies againſt his life, in vain endeavoured to detach Mr. M——r from the orphan's cauſe by innumerable artifices, inſinuating, cajoling, and miſrepreſenting, with ſurprizing dexterity and perſeverance.

" His protector, far from being ſatisfied with their reaſons, was not only deaf to their remonſtrances, but, believing him in danger from their repeated efforts, had him privately conveyed into the country; where an unhappy accident (which he hath ever ſince ſincerely regretted) furniſhed his adverſary with a colourable pretext to cut him off in the beginning of his career.

" A man happening to loſe his life by the accidental diſcharge of a piece that chanced to be in the young gentleman's hands, the account of this misfortune no ſooner reached the ears of his uncle, than he expreſſed the moſt immoderate joy at having found ſo good a handle for deſtroying him under colour of law.

He

He immediately constituted himself profecutor; fet his emiffaries at work to fecure a coroner's inqueft fuited to his cruel purpofes; fet out for the place in perfon, to take care that the prifoner fhould not efcape; infulted him in gaol in the moft inhuman manner; employed a whole army of attornies and agents to fpirit up and carry on a moft virulent profecution; practifed all the unfair methods that could be invented, in order that the unhappy gentleman fhould be tranfported to Newgate, from the healthy prifon to which he was at firft committed; endeavoured to inveigle him into deftructive confeffions; and not to mention other more infamous arts employed in the affair of evidence, attempted to furprize him upon his trial in the abfence of his witneffes and counfel, contrary to a previous agreement with the profecutor's own attorney: nay, he even appeared in perfon upon the bench at the trial, in order to intimidate the evidence, and brow-beat the unfortunate prifoner at the bar; and expended above a thoufand pounds in that profecution. In fpite of all his wicked efforts, however, which were defeated by the fpirit and indefatigable induftry of Mr. M——r, the young gentleman was honourably acquitted, to the evident fatisfaction of all the impartial; the misfortune that gave a handle for that unnatural profecution, appearing to a demonftration to have been a mere accident.

"In a few months his protector, who had now openly efpoufed his caufe, (taking with him two gentlemen to witnefs his tranfactions) conducted him to his native country, with a view to be better informed of the ftrength of his pretenfions, than he could be by the intelligences he had hitherto received, or by the claimant's own dark and almoft obliterated remembrance of the facts which were effential to be known. Upon their arrival in Dublin, application was made to thofe perfons whom Mr. A——y had named as his fchoolmafters and companions, together with the fervants and neighbours of his father. Thefe, though examined fe-

parately,

parately, without having the least previous intimation of what the claimant had reported, agreed in their accounts with him, as well as with one another, and mentioned many other people as acquainted with the same facts, to whom Mr. M——r had recourse, and still met with the same unvaried information. By these means he made such progress in his enquiries, that in less than two months no fewer than one hundred persons from different quarters of the kingdom, either personally or by letters, communicated their knowledge of the claimant, in declarations consonant with one another, as well as with the accounts he gave of himself. Several servants who had lived with his father, and been deceived with the story of his death, so industriously propagated by his uncle, no sooner heard of his being in Dublin, than they came from different parts of the country to see him; and though great pains were taken to deceive them, they nevertheless knew him at first sight; some of them fell upon their knees to thank Heaven for his preservation, embraced his legs, and shed tears of joy for his return.

"Although the conduct of his adversary, particularly in the abovementioned prosecution, together with the evidence that already appeared, were sufficient to convince all mankind of the truth of the claimant's pretensions, Mr. M——r, in order to be farther satisfied, resolved to see how he would be received upon the spot where he was born; justly concluding, that if he was really an impostor, the bastard of a kitchen-wench, produced in a country entirely possessed by his enemy and his allies, he must be looked upon in that place with the utmost detestation and contempt.

"This his intention was no sooner known to the adverse party, than their agents and friends, from all quarters, repaired to that place with all possible dispatch, and used all their influence with the people, in remonstrances, threats, and all the other arts they could devise, not only to discountenance the claimant upon his arrival, but even to spirit up a mob to insult him.

Notwith-

Notwithſtanding theſe precautions, and the ſervile awe and ſubjection in which tenants are kept by their landlords in that part of the country, as ſoon as it was known that Mr. A——y approached the town, the inhabitants crowded out in great multitudes to receive and welcome him, and accompanied him into town with acclamations and other expreſſions of joy, inſomuch that the agents of his adverſary durſt not ſhew their faces. The ſovereign of the corporation, who was a particular creature and favourite of the uſurper, and whoſe all depended upon the iſſue of the cauſe, was ſo conſcious of the ſtranger's right, and ſo much awed by the behaviour of the people, who knew that conſciouſneſs, that he did not think it ſafe, even to preſerve the appearance of neutrality upon this occaſion, but actually held the ſtirrup while Mr. A——y diſmounted from his horſe.

" This ſenſe of conviction in the people manifeſted itſelf ſtill more powerfully, when he returned to the ſame place in the year 1744, about which time Lord A——a being informed of his reſolution, determined again to be before-hand with him, and ſet out in perſon with his agents and friends, ſome of whom were detached before him, to prepare for his reception, and induce the people to meet him in a body, and accompany him to town, with ſuch expreſſions of welcome as they had before beſtowed on his nephew; but in ſpite of all their art and intereſt, he was ſuffered to paſs through the ſtreet in a mournful ſilence; and though ſeveral barrels of beer were produced, to court the favour of the populace, they had no other effect than that of drawing their ridicule upon the donor; whereas, when Mr. A——y, two days afterwards appeared, all the inhabitants, with garlands, ſtreamers, muſick, and other enſigns of joy, crouded out to meet him, and uſhered him into town with ſuch demonſtrations of pleaſure and good-will, that the noble peer found it convenient to hide himſelf from the reſentment of his own tenants, the effects of which he muſt have ſeverely felt, had not he

been ſcreened by the timely remonſtrances of Mr. M——r, and the other gentleman who accompanied his competitor.

"Nor did his apprehenſion vaniſh with the tranſaction of this day; the town was again in uproar on the Sunday following, when it was known that Mr. A—y intended to come thither from Dunmain to church: they went out to meet him as before, and conducted him to the church-door with acclamations, which terrified his uncle to ſuch a degree, that he fled with precipitation in a boat, and ſoon after entirely quitted the place.

"It would be almoſt an endleſs taſk to enumerate the particular ſteps that were taken by one ſide to promote, and by the other to delay the trial: the young gentleman's adverſaries finding that they could not, by all the ſubterfuges and arts they had uſed, evade it, repeated attempts were made to aſſaſſinate him and his protector, and every obſtruction thrown in the way of his cauſe which craft could invent, villainy execute, and undue influence confirm. But all theſe difficulties were ſurmounted by the vigilance, conſtancy, courage, and ſagacity of M——r; and at laſt the affair was brought to a very ſolemn trial at bar, which being continued, by ſeveral adjournments, from the eleventh to the twenty-fifth day of November, a verdict was found for the claimant by a jury of gentlemen, which, in point of reputation and property, cannot be eaſily paralleled in the annals of that or any other country; a jury that could by no means be ſuſpected of prepoſſeſſions in favour of Mr. A——y, (to whoſe perſon they were abſolute ſtrangers) eſpecially if we conſider that a gentleman in their neighbourhood, who was nephew to the foreman, and nearly related to ſome of the reſt of their number, forfeited a conſiderable eſtate by their deciſion.

"This verdict," ſaid the parſon, "gave the higheſt ſatisfaction to all impartial perſons that were within reach of being duly informed of their proceedings, and

and of the different genius and conduct of the parties engaged in the contest; but more especially to ſuch as were in court (as I was) at the trial, and had an opportuity of obſerving the characters and behaviour of the perſons who appeared there to give evidence. To ſuch it was very apparent, that all the witneſſes produced there on the part of the uncle, were either his tenants, dependents, pot-companions, or perſons ſome way or other intereſted in the iſſue of the ſuit, and remarkable for a low kind of cunning; that many of them were perſons of profligate lives, who deſerved no credit; that (independent of the levity of their characters) thoſe of them who went under the denomination of colonels (Colonel L——ſts alone excepted, who had nothing to ſay, and was only brought there in order to give credit to that party) made ſo ridiculous a figure, and gave ſo abſurd, contradictory, and inconſiſtent an evidence, as no court or jury could give the leaſt degree of credit to. On the other hand it was obſerved, that the nephew and Mr. M——r, his chief manager, (being abſolute ſtrangers in that country, and unacquainted with the characters of the perſons they had to deal with) were obliged to lay before the court and jury ſuch evidence as came to their hand, ſome of whom plainly appeared to have been put upon them by their adverſaries, with a deſign to hurt. It was alſo manifeſt, that the witneſſes produced for Mr. A——y were ſuch as could have no manner of connection with him, nor any dependence whatſoever upon him, to influence their evidence; for the far greateſt part of them had never ſeen him from his infancy till the trial began; and many of them (though poor and undignified with the title of colonels) were people of unblemiſhed character, of great ſimplicity, and ſuch as no man in his ſenſes would pitch upon to ſupport a bad cauſe. It is plain that the jury (whoſe well-known honour, impartiality, and penetration, muſt be revered by all who are acquainted with them) were not under the leaſt difficulty about their verdict; for they were not incloſed above

half an hour when they returned with it. These gentlemen could not help observing the great inequality of the parties engaged, the great advantages that the uncle had in every other respect (except the truth and justice of his case) over the nephew, by means of his vast possessions, and of his power and influence all round the place of his birth; nor could the contrast between the different geniuses of the two parties escape their observation. They could not but see and conclude, that a person who had confessedly transported and sold his orphan nephew into slavery; who, on his return, had carried on so unwarrantable and cruel a prosecution to take away his life, under colour of law; and who had also given such glaring proofs of his skill and dexterity in the management of witnesses for that cruel purpose; was in like manner capable of exerting the same happy talent on this occasion, when his all was at stake; more especially, as he had so many others who were equally interested with himself, and whose abilities in that respect fell nothing short of his own, to second him in it. The gentlemen of the jury had also a near view of the manner in which the witnesses delivered their testimonies, and had from thence an opportunity of observing many circumstances and distinguishing characteristicks of truth and falshood, from which a great deal could be gathered that could not be adequately conveyed by any printed account, how exact soever; consequently they must have been much better judges of the evidence on which they founded their verdict, than any person who had not the same opportunity can possibly be.

"These, Mr. Pickle, were my reflections on what I had occasion to observe concerning that famous trial; and on my return to England two years after, I could not help pitying the self-sufficiency of some people, who, at this distance, pretended to pass their judgment on that verdict, with as great positiveness as if they had been in the secrets of the cause, or upon the jury who tried it; and that from no better authority than

the

the declamations of Lord A——a's emiſſaries, and ſome falſified printed accounts, artfully cooked up on purpoſe to miſlead and deceive.

"But to return from this digreſſion: Lord A——a, the defendant in that cauſe, was ſo conſcious of the ſtrength and merits of his injured nephew's caſe, and that a verdict would go againſt him, that he ordered a writ of error to be made out before the trial was ended; and the verdict was no ſooner given, than he immediately lodged it, though he well knew he had no manner of error to aſſign. This expedient was practiſed merely for vexation and delay, in order to keep Mr. A——y from the poſſeſſion of the ſmall eſtate he had recovered by the verdict; that his ſlender funds being exhauſted, he might be deprived of other means to proſecute his right; and, by the moſt oppreſſive contrivances and ſcandalous chicanery, it has been kept up to this day, without being able to aſſign the leaſt ſhadow of any error.

"Lord A——a was not the only antagoniſt that Mr. A—y had to deal with; all the different branches of the A——a family, who had been worrying one another at law ever ſince the death of the late Earl of A——a, about the partition of his great eſtate, were now firmly united in an aſſociation againſt this unfortunate gentleman; mutual deeds were executed among them, by which many great lordſhips and eſtates were given up by the uncle to perſons who had no right to poſſeſs them, in order to engage them to ſide with him againſt his nephew, in withholding the unjuſt poſſeſſion of the remainder.

"Theſe confederates having held ſeveral conſultations againſt their common enemy, and finding that his cauſe gathered daily ſtrength ſince the trial, by the acceſſion of many witneſſes of figure and reputation who had not been heard of before; and that the only chance they had to prevent the ſpeedy eſtabliſhment of his right, and their own deſtruction, was by ſtripping Mr. M——r of the little money that yet remained, and

ſtopping all farther reſources whereby he might be enabled to proceed; they therefore came to a determined reſolution to carry that hopeful ſcheme into execution; and in purſuance thereof they have left no expedient or ſtratagem, how extraordinary or ſcandalous ſoever, unpractiſed, to diſtreſs Mr. A——y and that gentleman. For that end, all the oppreſſive arts, and dilatory, expenſive contrivances that the fertile invention of the loweſt pettifoggers of the law could poſſibly deviſe, have with great dexterity been played off againſt them in fruitleſs quibbling and malicious ſuits, entirely foreign to the merits of the cauſe. Not to mention numberleſs other acts of oppreſſion, the moſt extraordinary and unprecedented proceedings; by means whereof this ſham writ of error hath been kept on foot ever ſince November 1743, is to me," ſaid the doctor, "a moſt flagrant inſtance, not only of the prevalence of power and money, (when employed, as in the preſent caſe, againſt an unfortunate helpleſs man, diſabled, as he is, of the means of aſcertaining his right) but of the badneſs of a cauſe, that hath recourſe to ſo many iniquitous expedients to ſupport it.

"In a word, the whole conduct of Lord A——a and his party, from the beginning to this time, hath been ſuch, as ſufficiently manifeſts that it could proceed from no other motives than a conſciouſneſs of Mr. A——y's right, and of their own illegal uſurpations, and from a terror of truſting the merits of their caſe to a fair diſcuſſion by the laws of their country; and that the intention and main drift of all their proceedings plainly tends to ſtifle and ſmother the merits of the caſe from the knowledge of the world, by oppreſſive arts and ingenious delays, rather than truſt it to the candid determination of an honeſt jury. What elſe could be the motives of kidnapping the claimant, and tranſporting him when an infant; of the various attempts made upon his life ſince his return; of the attempts to diveſt him of all aſſiſtance to aſcertain his right, by endeavouring ſo ſolicitouſly to prevail on Mr. M——r to

abandon

abandon him in the beginning; of retaining an army of counſel, before any ſuit had been commenced; of the many ſiniſter attempts to prevent the trial at bar; of the various arts made uſe of to terrify any one from appearing as witneſs for the claimant, and to ſeduce thoſe who had appeared; of the ſhameleſs, unprecedented, low tricks, now practiſed to keep him out of the poſſeſſion of that eſtate for which he had obtained the verdict, thereby to diſable him from bringing his cauſe to a farther hearing; and of the attempts made to buy up Mr. M——r's debts, and to ſpirit up ſuits againſt him. Is it not obvious, from all theſe circumſtances, as well as from the obſtruction they have given to the attorney-general's proceeding, to make a report to his majeſty on the claimant's petition to the king for the peerage, which was referred by his majeſty to that gentleman ſo far back as 1743; that all their efforts are bent to that one point of ſtifling, rather than ſuffering the merits of this cauſe to come to a fair and candid hearing; and that the ſole conſideration at preſent between them and this unfortunate man, is not whether he is right or wrong, but whether he ſhall or ſhall not find money to bring this cauſe to a final determination.

"Lord A—— and his confederates not thinking themſelves ſafe with all theſe expedients, while there was a poſſibility of their antagoniſt's obtaining any aſſiſtance from ſuch as humanity, compaſſion, generoſity, or a love of juſtice, might induce to lay open their purſes to his aſſiſtance in aſcertaining his right, have, by themſelves and their numerous emiſſaries, employed all the arts of calumny, ſlander, and detraction, againſt him, by traducing his cauſe, vilifying his perſon, and moſt baſely and cruelly tearing his character to pieces by a thouſand miſrepreſentations, purpoſely invented and induſtriouſly propagated in all places of reſort, which is a kind of cowardly aſſaſſination that there is no guarding againſt: yet, in ſpite of all theſe machinations, and the ſhameful indifference of mankind, who ſtand aloof unconcerned, and ſee this unhappy gentle-

man moſt inhumanly oppreſſed by the weight of lawleſs power and faction, M——r, far from ſuffering himſelf to be dejected by the multiplying difficulties that croud upon him, ſtill exerts himſelf with amazing fortitude and aſſiduity, and will (I doubt not) bring the affair he began and carried on with ſo much ſpirit, while his finances laſted, to an happy concluſion.

" It would exceed the bounds of my intention, and perhaps treſpaſs too much upon your time, were I to enumerate the low artifices and ſhameful quibbles, by which the uſurper has found means to procraſtinate the deciſion of the conteſt between him and his hapleſs nephew, or to give a detail of the damage and perplexity which Mr. M——r has ſuſtained and been involved in, by the treachery and ingratitude of ſome who liſted themſelves under him in the proſecution of this affair, and by the villainy of others, who, under various pretences of material diſcoveries they had to make, &c. had faſtened themſelves upon him, and continued to do all the miſchief in their power, until the cloven foot was detected.

" One inſtance, however, is ſo flagrantly flagitious, that I cannot reſiſt the inclination I feel to relate it, as an example of the moſt infernal perfidy that perhaps ever entered the human heart. I have already mentioned the part which H——n acted in the beginning of M——r's connection with the unfortunate ſtranger, and hinted that the ſaid H——n lay under many obligations to that gentleman, before Mr. A——y's arrival in England. He had been chief agent to Lord A——a, and, as it afterwards appeared, received ſeveral payments of a ſecret penſion which that lord enjoyed, for which he either could not, or would not, account. His lordſhip therefore, in order to compel him to it, took out writs againſt him, and his houſe was continually ſurrounded with catchpoles for the ſpace of two whole years.

" Mr. M—— believing, from H—n's own account of the matter, that the poor man was greatly injured, and

and profecuted on account of his attachment to the unhappy young gentleman, did him all the good offices in his power, and became fecurity for him on feveral occafions: nay, fuch was his opinion of his integrity, that after Mr. A——y was cleared of the profecution carried on againft him by his uncle, his perfon was trufted to the care of this hypocrite, who defired that the young gentleman might lodge at his houfe for the convenience of air, M——r's own occafions calling him often in the country.

"Having thus, by his confummate diffimulation, acquired fuch a valuable charge, he wrote a letter to one of Lord A——a's attornies, offering to betray Mr. A——y, provided his lordfhip would fettle his account and give him a difcharge for eight hundred pounds of the penfion which he had received and not accounted for. Mr. M——r, informed of this treacherous propofal, immediately removed his lodger from his houfe into his own, without affigning his reafons for fo doing until he was obliged to declare it, in order to free himfelf from the importunities of H——n, who earneftly folicited his return. This mifcreant finding himfelf detected and difappointed in his villainous defign, was fo much enraged at his mifcarriage, that, forgetting all the benefits he had received from M—— for a feries of years, he practifed all the mifchief that his malice could contrive againft him; and at length entered into a confederacy with one G—ft—ey, and feveral other abandoned wretches, who, as before faid, under various pretences of being able to make material difcoveries, and otherwife to ferve the caufe, had found means to be employed in fome extra bufinefs relating to it, though their real intention was to betray the claimant.

"Thefe confederates, in conjunction with fome auxiliaries of infamous character, being informed that Mr. M——r was on the point of fecuring a confiderable fum, to enable him to profecute Mr. A——y's right, and to bring it to a happy conclufion, contrived a

deep-laid ſcheme to diſappoint him in it, and at once to ruin the cauſe. And previous meaſures being taken for that wicked purpoſe, they impoſed upon the young gentleman's inexperience and credulity, by inſinuations equally falſe, plauſible, and malicious: to which they at length gained his belief, by the mention of ſome circumſtances that gave what they alledged an air of probability, and even of truth. They ſwore that Mr. M——r had taken out an action againſt him for a very large ſum of money; that they had actually ſeen the writ; that the intention of it was to throw him into priſon for life, and ruin his cauſe, in conſequence of an agreement made by him with Lord A——a, and his other enemies, to retrieve the money that he had laid out in the cauſe.

" This plauſible tale was enforced with ſuch an air of truth, candour, and earneſt concern for his ſafety, and was ſtrengthened by ſo many imprecations and corroborating circumſtances of their invention, as would have ſtaggered one of much greater experience and knowledge of mankind than Mr. A——y could be ſuppoſed at that time. The notion of perpetual impriſonment, and the certain ruin they made him believe his cauſe was threatened with, worked upon his imagination to ſuch a degree, that he ſuffered himſelf to be led like a lamb to the ſlaughter, by this artful band of villains; who ſecreted him at the lodgings of one Pr—nt—ce, an intimate of G—ſt—ey's, for ſeveral days, under colour of his being hunted by bailiffs employed by Mr. M——r, where he was not only obliged by them to change his name, but even his wife was not ſuffered to have acceſs to him.

" Their deſign was to have ſold him, or drawn him into a ruinous compromiſe with his adverſaries, for a valuable conſideration to themſelves. But as no ties are binding among ſuch a knot of villains, the reſt of the conſpirators were jockied by G—ſt—ey; who, in order to monopolize the advantage to himſelf, hurried his prize into the country, and ſecreted him even from

his

his confederates, in a place of concealment one hundred miles from London, under the ſame ridiculous pretence of M——r's having taken out a writ againſt him, and of bailiffs being in purſuit of him every where round London.

" He was no ſooner there than G—ſt—ey, as a previous ſtep to the other villainy he intended, tricked him out of a bond for ſix thouſand pounds, under colour of his having a perſon ready to advance the like ſum upon it, as an immediate fund for carrying on his cauſe; aſſuring him, at the ſame time, that he had a ſet of gentlemen ready, who were willing to advance twenty-five thouſand pounds more for the ſame purpoſe, and to allow him five hundred pounds a year for his maintenance, till his cauſe ſhould be made an end of, provided that Mr. M——r ſhould have no farther concern with him or his cauſe.

" Mr. A——y, having by this time received ſome intimations of the deceit that had been put upon him, made anſwer, that he ſhould look upon himſelf as a very ungrateful monſter, indeed, if he deſerted a perſon who had ſaved his life, and ſo generouſly ventured his own, together with his fortune, in his cauſe, until he ſhould firſt be certain of the truth of what was alledged of him, and abſolutely rejected the propoſal. G—ſt—ey, who had no other view in making it than to cover the ſecret villainy he meditated againſt him, and to facilitate the execution thereof, eaſily receded from it when he found Mr. A——y ſo averſe to it, and undertook nevertheleſs to raiſe the money; adding, that he might, if he pleaſed, return to Mr. M——r whenever it was ſecured. The whole drift of this pretended undertaking to raiſe the twenty-five thouſand pounds, was only to lay a foundation for a dextrous contrivance to draw Mr. A——y unwarily into the execution of a deed, relinquiſhing all his right and title, under a notion of its beeing a deed to ſecure the repayment of that ſum.

" G—ſt—ey, having, as he imagined, ſo far paved the

the way for the execution of ſuch a deed, enters into an agreement with an agent, employed for that purpoſe by Mr. A——ey's adverſaries, purporting, that in conſideration of the payment of a bond for ſix thouſand pounds, which he G—ſt—ey, had, as he pretended, laid out in Mr. A——ey's cauſe, and of an annuity of ſeven hundred pounds a year, he was to procure for them from Mr. A——ey a deed ready executed, relinquiſhing all right and title to the An—ey eſtate and honours. Every thing being prepared for the execution of this infernal ſcheme, unknown to Mr. A——ey, G—ſt—ey then thought proper to ſend for him to town from his retirement, in order, as he pretended, to execute a ſecurity of twenty-five thouſand pounds.

" This intended victim to that villain's avarice no ſooner arrived in town, full of hopes of money to carry on his cauſe, and of agreeably ſurprizing his friend and protector Mr. M—— with ſo ſeaſonable and unexpected a reinforcement, than an unforeſeen difficulty aroſe, concerning the payment of G—ſt—ey's ſix thouſand pound bond. That money was to have been raiſed out of the eſtate of a lunatick, which could not be done without the leave of the court of chancery, to whom an account muſt have been given of the intended application of it. While preparations were making to rectify this omiſſion, G—ſt—ey immediately carried Mr. A——ey again into the country, leſt he ſhould happen to be undeceived by ſome means or other.

" In the mean time, this wicked machination was providentially diſcovered by Mr. M——r, before it could be carried into execution, by means of the jealouſies that aroſe among the conſpirators themſelves; and was, at the ſame time, confirmed to him by a perſon whom the very agent for the An——ey party had entruſted with the ſecret. M——r no ſooner detected it, than he communicated his diſcovery to one of Mr. A——ey's counſel, a man of great worth; and immediately thereupon took proper meaſures to defeat it. He then found means to lay open to Mr. A——ey

himſelf, the treacherous ſcheme that was laid for his deſtruction: he was highly ſenſible of it; and could never afterwards reflect on the ſnare that he had ſo unwarily been drawn into, and had ſo narrowly eſcaped, without a mixture of horror, ſhame, and gratitude to his deliverer.

"The conſummate aſſurance of the monſters who were engaged in this plot, after they had been detected, and upbraided with their treachery, is ſcarce to be paralleled; for they not only owned the fact of ſpiriting Mr. A——ey away, in the manner above mentioned, but juſtified their doing it as tending to his ſervice. They alſo maintained, that they had actually ſecured the twenty-five thouſand pounds for him, though they never could name any one perſon who was to have advanced the money. No man was more active in this ſcheme than H——n; nor any man more ſolicitous to keep Mr. A——ey up in the falſe impreſſions he had received, or in projecting methods to ruin his protector, than he.

"Among many other expedients for that purpoſe, a moſt malicious attempt was made to lodge an information againſt him for treaſonable practices with the ſecretary of ſtate, notwithſtanding the repeated proofs he had given of his loyalty; and as a preparatory ſtep to his accuſation, which this traitor dictated, was copied by another perſon, and actually ſent to the Earl of C——d, importing that the perſon who copied the letter had an affair of conſequence to communicate to his lordſhip, if he would appoint a time of receiving the information. But that perſon, upon full conviction of the villainy of the ſcheme, abſolutely refuſed to proceed farther in it; ſo that his malice once more proved abortive: and before he had time to execute any other contrivance of the ſame nature, he was impriſoned in this very gaol for debt.

"Here, finding his creditors inexorable, and himſelf deſtitute of all other reſource, he made application to the very man whom he had injured in ſuch an outra-

geous manner; set forth his deplorable case in the most pathetick terms; and intreated him, with the most abject humility, to use his influence in his behalf. The distress of this varlet immediately disarmed M——r of his resentment, and even excited his compassion. Without sending any answer to his remonstrances, he interceded for him with his creditors; and the person to whom he was chiefly indebted, refusing to release him without security, this unwearied benefactor joined with the prisoner in a bond for above two hundred and forty pounds, for which he obtained his release.

"He was no sooner discharged, however, than he entered into fresh combinations with G——y and others, in order to thwart his deliverer in his schemes of raising money, and otherwise to distress and deprive him of liberty; for which purpose, no art or industry (perjury not excepted) hath been spared. And, what is still more extraordinary, this perfidious monster having found money to take up the bond, in consequence of which he regained his freedom, hath procured a writ against M——r, upon that very obligation; and taken assignments to some other debts of that gentleman, with the same Christian intention. But, hitherto, he hath by surprizing sagacity and unshaken resolution baffled all their infernal contrivances, and retorted some of their machinations on their own heads. At this time, when he is supposed by some, and represented by others, as under the circumstances of oblivion and despondence, he proceeds in his design with the utmost calmness and intrepidity, meditating schemes, and ripening measures, that will one day confound his enemies, and attract the notice and admiration of mankind."

Peregrine having thanked the priest for his obliging information, expressed his surprize at the scandalous inattention of the world to an affair of such importance: observing, that, by such inhuman neglect, this unfortunate young gentleman, Mr. A——ey, was absolutely deprived of all the benefit of society; the sole end of

which is, to protect the rights, redress the grievances, and promote the happiness of individuals. As for the character of M——r, he said it was so romantically singular in all its circumstances, that, though other motives were wanting, curiosity alone would induce him to seek his acquaintance: but he did not at all wonder at the ungrateful returns which had been made to his generosity by H——n and many others, whom he had served in a manner that few besides him would have done; for he had long been convinced of the truth conveyed in these lines of a celebrated Italian author:

"*Li beneficii, che per la loro grandezza, non puonno
"esser guiderdonati, con la scelerata moneta dell' in-
"gratitudine, sono pagati.*"

"The story which you have related of that young gentleman," said he, "bears a very strong resemblance to the fate of a Spanish nobleman, as it was communicated to me by one of his own intimate friends at Paris. The Countess D'Alvarez died immediately after the birth of a son, and the husband surviving her but three years, the child was left sole heir to his honours and estate, under the guardianship of his uncle, who had a small fortune and a great many children. This inhuman relation, coveting the wealth of his infant ward, formed a design against the life of the helpless orphan, and trusted the execution of it to his valet de chambre, who was tempted to undertake the murder by the promise of a considerable reward. He accordingly stabbed the boy with a knife, in three different places, on the right side of his neck: but as he was not used to such barbarous attempts, his hand failed in the performance; and he was seized with such remorse, that, perceiving the wounds were not mortal, he carried the hapless victim to the house of a surgeon, by whose care they were healed: and in the mean time, that he might not forfeit his recompence, found means to persuade his employer, that his orders were performed. A bundle being made up for the purpose, was publickly interred as

the body of the child, who was ſaid to have been ſuddenly carried off by a convulſion: and the uncle, without oppoſition, ſucceeded to his honours and eſtate. The boy being cured of his hurts, was, about the age of ſix, delivered, with a ſmall ſum of money, to a merchant juſt embarking for Turky; who was given to underſtand, that he was the baſtard of a man of quality, and that for family reaſons it was neceſſary to conceal his birth.

"While the unfortunate orphan remained in this deplorable ſtate of bondage, all the children of the uſurper died one after another; and he himſelf being taken dangerouſly ill, attributed all his afflictions to the juſt judgment of God, and communicated his anxiety on that ſubject to the valet de chambre, who had been employed in the murder of his nephew. That domeſtick, in order to quiet his maſter's conſcience, and calm the perturbation of his ſpirits, confeſſed what he had done, and gave him hopes of ſtill finding the boy by dint of induſtry and expence. The unhappy child being the only hope of the family of Alvarez, the uncle immediately ordered a minute enquiry to be ſet on foot; in conſequence of which he was informed that the orphan had been ſold to a Turk, who had afterwards transferred him to an Engliſh merchant, by whom he was conveyed to London.

"An expreſs was immediately diſpatched to this capital, where he underſtood that the unhappy exile had, in conſideration of his faithful ſervices, been bound apprentice to a French barber-ſurgeon; and after he had ſufficiently qualified himſelf in that profeſſion, been received into the family of the Count de Gallas, at that time the emperor's ambaſſador at the court of London. From the houſe of this nobleman he was traced into the ſervice of Count D'Oberſtorf, where he had married his lady's chamber maid, and then gone to ſettle as a ſurgeon in Bohemia.

"In the courſe of theſe enquiries ſeveral years elapſed; his uncle, who was very much attached to the houſe

house of Auſtria, lived at Barcelona when the father of this empreſs-queen reſided in that city, and lent him a very conſiderable ſum of money in the moſt preſſing emergency of his affairs; and when that prince was on the point of returning to Germany, the old count finding his end approaching, ſent his father-confeſſor to his majeſty, with a circumſtantial account of the barbarity he had practiſed againſt his nephew, for which he implored forgiveneſs, and begged he would give orders, that the orphan, when found, ſhould inherit the dignities and fortune which he had unjuſtly uſurped.

"His majeſty aſſured the old man, that he might make himſelf eaſy on that ſcore, and ordered the confeſſor to follow him to Vienna, immediately after the count's death, in order to aſſiſt his endeavours in finding out the injured heir. The prieſt did not fail to yield obedience to this command: he informed himſelf of certain natural marks on the young count's body, which were known to the nurſe and women who attended him in his infancy; and with a gentleman whom the emperor ordered to accompany him, ſet out for Bohemia, where he ſoon found the object of his enquiry, in the capacity of major-domo to a nobleman of that country, he having quitted his profeſſion of ſurgery for that office.

"He was not a little ſurprized when he found himſelf circumſtantially catechized about the particulars of his life, by perſons commiſſioned for that purpoſe by the emperor. He told them, that he was abſolutely ignorant of his own birth, though he had been informed, during his reſidence in Turky, that he was the baſtard of a Spaniſh grandee, and gave them a minute detail of the pilgrimage he had undergone. This information agreeing with the intelligence which the prieſt had already received, and being corroborated with the marks upon his body, and the very ſcars of the wounds which had been inflicted upon him in his infancy, the confeſſor, without farther heſitation, ſa-

luted him by the name of Count D'Alvarez, grandee of Spain, and explained the whole myſtery of his fortune.

"If he was agreeably amazed at this explanation, the caſe was otherwiſe with his wife, who thought herſelf in great danger of being abandoned by an huſband of ſuch high rank; but he immediately diſpelled her apprehenſion, by aſſuring her, that as ſhe had ſhared in his adverſity, ſhe ſhould alſo partake of his good fortune. He ſet out immediately for Vienna, to make his acknowledgments to the emperor, who favoured him with a very gracious reception, promiſed to uſe his influence, ſo that he might enjoy the honours and eſtate of his family; and in the mean time acknowledged himſelf his debtor for four hundred thouſand florins, which he had borrowed from his uncle. He threw himſelf at the feet of his auguſt protector, expreſſed the moſt grateful ſenſe of his goodneſs, and begged he might be permitted to ſettle in ſome of his imperial majeſty's dominions.

"This requeſt was immediately granted; he was allowed to purchaſe land in any part of the hereditary dominions of the houſe of Auſtria, to the amount of the ſum I have mentioned; and made choice of the country of Ratibor in Sileſia, where, in all probability, he ſtill reſides."

Peregrine had ſcarce finiſhed this narrative, when he perceived Mr. M——r ſlip ſomething into the hand of the young man with whom he had been converſing at the other end of the room, and riſe up from the table in order to take his leave. He at once underſtood the meaning of this conveyance, and longed for an opportunity to be acquainted with ſuch a rare inſtance of primitive benevolence; but the conſciouſneſs of his preſent ſituation hindered him from making any advance that might be conſtrued into forwardneſs or preſumption.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

He is surprized with the Appearance of Hatchway and Pipes, who take up their Habitation in his Neighbourhood, contrary to his Inclination and express Desire.

BEING now regularly initiated in the mysteries of the Fleet, and reconciled in some measure to the customs of the place, he began to bear the edge of reflection without wincing; and thinking it would be highly imprudent in him to defer any longer the purposes by which only he could enjoy any ease and satisfaction in his confinement, he resolved to resume his task of translating, and every week compose an occasional paper, by way of revenge upon the minister, against whom he had denounced eternal war. With this view he locked himself up in his chamber, and went to work with great eagerness and application; when he was interrupted by a ticket-porter, who, putting a letter in his hand, vanished in a moment, before he had time to peruse the contents.

Our hero, opening this billet, was not a little surprized to find a bank-note for fifty pounds, enclosed in a blank sheet of paper; and having exercised his memory and penetration on the subject of this unexpected windfal, had just concluded, that it could come from no other than the lady who had so kindly visited him a few days before, when his ears were suddenly invaded by the well-known sound of that whistle which always hung about the neck of Pipes, as a memorial of his former occupation. This tune being performed, he heard the noise of a wooden leg ascending the stairs, upon which he opened his door, and beheld his friend Hatchway, with his old ship-mate at his back.

After a cordial shake of the hand, with the usual salutation of, "What cheer, Cousin Pickle?" honest Jack seated himself without ceremony; and casting his eyes around the apartment, "Split my topstay-sail," said he, with an arch sneer, "you have got into a snug

birth,

birth, coufin! Here you may fit all weathers, without being turned out to take your watch, and no fear of the fhip's dragging her anchor. You ha'n't much room to fpare, 'tis true: an' I had known as how you ftowed fo clofe, Tom fhould have flung my own hammock for you, and then you might have knocked down this great lubberly hurricane houfe. But, mayhap, you turn in double, and fo you don't chufe to truft yourfelf and your doxy to a clue and canvafs."

Pickle bore his jokes with great good-humour; rallied him in his turn about the dairy-maid at the garrifon, enquiring about his friends in the country; afked if he had been to vifit his niece; and, finally, expreffed a defire of knowing the caufe of his journey to London. The lieutenant fatisfied his curiofity in all thefe particulars; and in anfwer to the laft queftion obferved, that from the information of Pipes, underftanding he was land-locked, he had come from the country in order to tow him into the offing. "I know not how the wind fits," faid he, "but if fo be, as three thoufand pounds will bring you clear of the cape, fay the word, and you fhan't lie wind-bound another glafs for want of the money."

This was an offer which few people in our hero's fituation would have altogether refufed; efpecially, as he had all the reafon in the world to believe, that, far from being a vain, unmeaning compliment, it was the genuine tribute of friendfhip, which the lieutenant would have willingly, aye, and with pleafure, paid. Neverthelefs, Peregrine peremptorily refufed his affiftance, though not without expreffing himfelf in terms of acknowledgment fuitable to the occafion. He told him it would be time enough to make ufe of his generofity when he fhould find himfelf deftitute of all other refource. Jack employed all his rhetorick with a view of perfuading him to take this opportunity to procure his own enlargement; and finding his arguments ineffectual, infifted upon his accepting an immediate fupply for his neceffary occafions; fwearing, with great vehemence,

vehemence, that he would never return to the garrison unless he would put him upon the footing of any other tenant, and receive his rent accordingly.

Our young gentleman as positively swore, that he never would consider him in that light: remonstrating, that he had long ago settled the house upon him for life, as a pledge of his own esteem, as well as in conformity with the commodore's desire: and beseeching him to return to his usual avocations, protesting that if ever his situation should subject him to the necessity of borrowing from his friends, Mr. Hatchway should be the first man to whom he would apply himself for succour. To convince him that this was not the case at present, he produced the bank-note which he had received in the letter, together with his own ready-money; and mentioned some other funds, which he invented *extempore*, in order to amuse the lieutenant's concern. In the close of this expostulation, he desired Pipes to conduct Mr. Hatchway to the coffee-house, where he might entertain himself with the newspapers for half an hour; during which he would put on his cloaths, and bespeak something for dinner, that they might enjoy each other's company as long as his occasions would permit him to stay in that place.

The two sailors were no sooner gone, than he took up the pen, and wrote the following letter, in which he inclosed the bank-note to his generous benefactress.

'MADAM,

'YOUR humanity is not more ingenious than my 'suspicion. In vain you attempt to impose upon me 'by an act of generosity which no person upon earth 'but your ladyship is capable of committing. Though 'your name was not subscribed on the paper, your 'sentiments were fully displayed in the contents, 'which I must beg leave to restore, with the same 'sense of gratitude, and for the same reasons, I ex-'pressed when last I had the honour to converse with 'you upon this subject. Though I am deprived of 'my liberty by the villainy and ingratitude of man-

'kind,

'kind, I am not yet destitute of the other convenien-
'cies of life: and, therefore, beg to be excused for in-
'curring an unnecessary addition to that load of obli-
'gation you have already laid upon, madam, your
'ladyship's most devoted, humble servant,

'PEREGRINE PICKLE.'

Having dressed himself, and repaired to the place of appointment, he dispatched this epistle by the hands of Pipes, who was ordered to leave it at her ladyship's house, without staying for an answer; and in the mean time gave directions for dinner; which he and his friend Hatchway ate very chearfully in his own apartment, after he had entertained him with a sight of all the curiosities in the place. During their repast, Jack repeated his kind offers to our adventurer, who declined them with his former obstinacy, and begged he might be no more importuned on that subject: but, if he insisted upon giving some fresh proofs of his friendship, he might have an opportunity of exhibiting it in taking Pipes under his care and protection; for nothing affected him so much as his inability to provide for such a faithful adherent.

The lieutenant desired he would give himself no trouble upon that score: he being, of his own accord, perfectly well disposed to befriend his old ship-mate, who should never want while he had a shilling to spare. But he began to drop some hints of an intention to fix his quarters in the Fleet; observing, that the air seemed to be very good in that place, and that he was tired of living in the country. What he said did not amount to a plain declaration, and therefore Peregrine did not answer it as such, though he perceived his drift; and took an opportunity of describing the inconveniencies of the place, in such a manner as he hoped would deter him from putting such an extravagant plan in execution.

This expedient, however, far from answering the end proposed, had a quite contrary effect, and furnished Hatchway with an argument against his own unwil-

lingness

lingnefs to quit fuch a difagreeable place. In all probability, Jack would have been more explicit with regard to the fcheme he had propofed, if the converfation had not been interrupted by the arrival of Cadwallader, who never failed in the performance of his diurnal vifit. Hatchway, conjecturing that this ftranger might have fome private bufinefs with his friend, quitted the apartment, on pretence of taking a turn; and meeting Pipes at the door, defired his company to the *Bare*, by which name the open fpace is diftinguifhed: where, during a courfe of perambulation, thefe two companions held a council upon Pickle: in confequence of which it was determined, fince he obftinately perfifted to refufe their affiftance, that they fhould take lodgings in his neighbourhood, with a view of being at hand to minifter unto his occafions, in fpite of his falfe delicacy, according to the emergency of his affairs.

This refolution being taken, they confulted the bar-keeper of the coffee-houfe about lodging, and fhe directed them to the warden: to whom the lieutenant, in his great wifdom, reprefented himfelf as a kinfman to Peregrine, who, rather than leave that young gentleman by himfelf to the unavoidable difcomforts of a prifon, was inclined to keep him company, till fuch time as his affairs could be put in order. This meafure he the more anxioufly defired to take, becaufe the prifoner was fometimes fubject to a difordered imagination, upon which occafion he ftood in need of extraordinary attendance; and therefore he (the lieutenant) intreated the warden to accommodate him with a lodging for himfelf and his fervant, for which he was ready to make any reafonable acknowledgment. The warden, who was a fenfible and humane man, could not help applauding his refolution; and feveral rooms being at that time unoccupied, he put him immediately in poffeffion of a couple, which were forthwith prepared for his reception.

This affair being fettled to his fatisfaction, he difpatched

patched Pipes for his portmanteau: and returning to the coffee-houſe, found Peregrine, with whom he ſpent the remaining part of the evening. Our hero, taking it for granted that he propoſed to ſet out for the garriſon next day, wrote a memorandum of ſome books which he had left in that habitation, and which he now deſired Jack to ſend up to town by the waggon, directed for Mr. Crabtree. He cautioned him againſt giving the leaſt hint of his misfortune in the neighbourhood, that it might remain, as long as poſſible, concealed from the knowledge of his ſiſter, (who, he knew, would afflict herſelf immoderately at the news;) nor reach the ears of the reſt of his family, who would exult and triumph over his diſtreſs.

Hatchway liſtened to his injunctions with great attention, and promiſed to demean himſelf accordingly: then the diſcourſe ſhifted to an agreeable recapitulation of the merry ſcenes they had formerly acted together; and the evening being pretty far advanced, Peregrine, with ſeeming reluctance, told him that the gates of the Fleet would in a few minutes be ſhut for the night, and that there was an abſolute neceſſity for his withdrawing to his lodging. Jack replied, that he could not think of parting with him ſo ſoon, after ſuch a long ſeparation; and that he was determined to ſtay with him an hour or two longer, if he ſhould be obliged to take up his lodging in the ſtreet. Pickle, rather than diſoblige his gueſt, indulged him in his deſire, and reſolved to give him a ſhare of his own bed. A pair of chickens and aſparagus were beſpoke for ſupper, at which Pipes attended with an air of internal ſatisfaction; and the bottle was bandied about in a jovial manner till midnight, when the lieutenant roſe up to take his leave, obſerving, that being fatigued with riding, he was inclined to turn-in. Pipes, upon this intimation, produced a lanthorn ready lighted; and Jack, ſhaking his entertainer by the hand, wiſhed him good night, and promiſed to viſit him again betimes in the morning.

Peregrine, imagining that his behaviour proceeded from the wine, which he had plentifully drank, told him, that if he was diſpoſed to ſleep, his bed was ready prepared in the room, and ordered his attendant to undreſs his maſter; upon which Mr. Hatchway gave him to underſtand, that he had no occaſion to incommode his friend, having already provided a lodging for himſelf; and the young gentleman demanding an explanation, he frankly owned what he had done, ſaying, "You gave me ſuch a diſmal account of the place, that I could not think of leaving you in it without company." Our young gentleman, who was naturally impatient of benefits, and foreſaw that this uncommon inſtance of Hatchway's friendſhip would encroach upon the plan which he had formed for his own ſubſiſtence, by engroſſing his time and attention, ſo as that he ſhould not be able to proſecute his labours, cloſeted the lieutenant next day, and demonſtrated to him the folly and ill conſequences of the ſtep he had taken. He obſerved that the world in general would look upon it as the effect of mere madneſs; and, if his relations were ſo diſpoſed, they might make it the foundation for a ſtatute of lunacy againſt him; that his abſence from the garriſon muſt be a very great detriment to his private affairs; and, laſtly, that his preſence in the Fleet would be a very great hindrance to Pickle himſelf, whoſe hope of regaining his liberty altogether depended upon his being detached from all company and interruption.

To theſe remonſtrances Jack replied, that, as to the opinion of the world, it was no more to him than a rotten net-line; and if his relations had a mind to have his upper-works condemned, he did not doubt but he ſhould be able to ſtand the ſurvey, without being declared unfit for ſervice; that he had no affairs at the garriſon, but ſuch as would keep cold; and with regard to Pickle's being interrupted by his preſence, he gave him his word, that he would never come alongſide of him, except when he ſhould give him the ſignal

for holding difcourfe. In conclufion, he fignified his refolution to ftay where he was, at all events, without making himfelf accountable to any perfon whatfoever.

Peregrine feeing him determined, defifted from any farther importunity; refolving, however, to tire him out of his plan by referve and fupercilious neglect; for he could not bear the thought of being fo notorioufly obliged by any perfon upon earth. With this view he quitted the lieutenant on fome flight pretence; after having told him, that he could not have the pleafure of his company at dinner, becaufe he was engaged with a particular club of his fellow-prifoners.

Jack was a ftranger to the punctilios of behaviour, and therefore did not take this declaration amifs; but had immediate recourfe to the advice of his counfellor Mr. Pipes, who propofed that he fhould go to the coffee-houfe and kitchen, and give the people to underftand that he would pay for all fuch liquor and provifions as Mr. Pickle fhould order to be fent to his own lodging. This expedient was immediately practifed; and as there was no credit in the place, Hatchway depofited a fum of money, by way of fecurity to the cook and the vintner, intimating, that there was a neceffity for taking that method of befriending his Coufin Peregrine, who was fubject to ftrange whims, that rendered it impoffible to ferve him any other way.

In confequence of thefe infinuations, it was that fame day rumoured about the Fleet, that Mr. Pickle was an unhappy gentleman difordered in his underftanding, and that the lieutenant was his near relation, who had fubjected himfelf to the inconvenience of living in a gaol, with the fole view of keeping a ftrict eye over his conduct. This report, however, did not reach the ears of our hero till the next day, when he fent one of the runners of the Fleet, who attended him, to befpeak and pay for a couple of pullets, and fomething elfe for dinner, to which he had already invited his friend Hatchway, in hopes of being able to perfuade him to retire into the country, after he had undergone

whole

whole day's mortification in the place. The meſſenger returned with an aſſurance, that the dinner ſhould be made ready according to his directions, and reſtored the money, obſerving that his kinſman had paid for what was beſpoke.

Peregrine was equally ſurprized and diſguſted at this information, and reſolved to chide the lieutenant ſeverely for his unſeaſonable treat, which he conſidered as a thing repugnant to his reputation. Meanwhile, he diſpatched his attendant for wine to the coffee-houſe, and finding his credit bolſtered up in that place by the ſame means, was enraged at the preſumption of Jack's friendſhip. He queſtioned the valet about it with ſuch manifeſtation of diſpleaſure, that the fellow, afraid of diſobliging ſuch a good maſter, frankly communicated the ſtory which was circulated at his expence. The young gentleman was ſo much incenſed at this piece of intelligence, that he wrote a bitter expoſtulation to the lieutenant, wherein he not only retracted his invitation, but declared that he would never converſe with him while he ſhould remain within the place.

Having thus obeyed the dictates of his anger, he gave notice to the cook, that he ſhould not have occaſion for what was ordered. Repairing to the coffee-houſe, he told the landlord, that whereas he underſtood the ſtranger with the wooden leg had prepoſſeſſed him and others with ridiculous notions, tending to bring the ſanity of his intellects in queſtion; and to confirm this imputation, had, under the pretence of conſanguinity, undertaken to defray his expences; he could not help (in juſtice to himſelf) declaring, that the ſame perſon was, in reality, the madman, who had given his keepers the ſlip; that therefore he (the landlord) would not find his account in complying with his orders, and encouraging him to frequent his houſe; and that for his own part, he would never enter the door, or favour him with the leaſt trifle of his cuſtom, if ever he ſhould for the future find himſelf anticipated in his payments by that unhappy lunatick.

The vintner was confounded at this retorted charge; and after much perplexity and deliberation, concluded that both parties were diſtracted; the ſtranger in paying a man's debts againſt his will, and Pickle, in being offended at ſuch forwardneſs of friendſhip.

CHAP. XV.

Theſe Aſſociates commit an Aſſault upon Crabtree, for which they are baniſhed from the Fleet. Peregrine begins to feel the Effects of Confinement.

OUR adventurer having dined at an ordinary, and in the afternoon retired to his own apartment as uſual, with his friend Cadwallader; Hatchway and his aſſociate, after they had been obliged to diſcuſs the proviſion for which they had paid, renewed their conference upon the old ſubject. Pipes giving his meſs-mate to underſtand, that Peregrine's chief confidante was the old deaf batchelor, whom he had ſeen at his lodging the preceding day, Mr. Hatchway in his great penetration diſcovered, that the young gentleman's obſtinacy proceeded from the advice of the miſanthrope, whom for that reaſon it was their buſineſs to chaſtiſe. Pipes entered into this opinion the more willingly, as he had all along believed the ſenior to be a ſort of wizard, or ſome caco-demon, whom it was not very creditable to be acquainted with. Indeed, he had been inſpired with this notion by the inſinuations of Hadgi, who had formerly dropped ſome hints touching Crabtree's profound knowledge in the magick art; mentioning, in particular, his being poſſeſſed of the philoſopher's ſtone; an aſſertion to which Tom had given implicit credit until his maſter was ſent to priſon for debt, when he could no longer ſuppoſe Cadwallader lord of ſuch a valuable ſecret, or elſe he would have certainly procured the enlargement of his moſt intimate friend.

With theſe ſentiments he eſpouſed the reſentment of Hatchway. They determined to ſeize the ſuppoſed conjuror with the firſt opportunity, on his return from his

his visit to Peregrine; and, without hesitation, exercise upon him the discipline of the pump. This plan they would have executed that same evening, had not the misanthrope luckily withdrawn himself by accident before it was dark, and even before they had intelligence of his return. But next day they kept themselves upon the watch till he appeared; and Pipes lifting his hat as Crabtree passed, "O damn ye, old Dunny!" said he, "you and I must grapple by and bye; and a'gad I shall lie so near your quarter, that your ear-ports will let in the sound, tho'f they are double caulked with oakum."

The misanthrope's ears were not quite so fast closed, but that they received this intimation; which, though delivered in terms that he did not well understand, had such an effect upon his apprehension, that he signified his doubts to Peregrine, observing, that he did not much like the looks of that same ruffian with the wooden leg. Pickle assured him he had nothing to fear from the two sailors, who could have no cause of resentment against him; or if they had, would not venture to take any step, which they knew must block up all the avenues to that reconcilement, about which they were so anxious; and, moreover, give such offence to the governor of the place, as would infallibly induce him to expel them both from his territories.

Notwithstanding this assurance, the young gentleman was not so confident of the lieutenant's discretion, as to believe that Crabtree's fears were altogether without foundation: he forthwith conjectured that Jack had taken umbrage at an intimacy from which he found himself excluded, and imputed his disgrace to the insinuations of Cadwallader, whom in all likelihood he intended to punish for his supposed advice; he knew his friend could sustain no great damage from the lieutenant's resentment, in a place which he could immediately alarm with his cries: and therefore wished he might fall into the snare, because it would furnish him with a pretence of complaint; in consequence of

which, the ſailors would be obliged to ſhift their quarters, ſo as that he ſhould be rid of their company, in which he at preſent could find no enjoyment.

Every thing happened as he had foreſeen; the miſanthrope, in his retreat from Peregrine's chamber, was aſſaulted by Hatchway and his aſſociate, who ſeized him by the collar without ceremony, and began to drag him towards the pump, at which they would have certainly complimented him with a very diſagreeable bath, had he not exalted his voice in ſuch a manner, as in a moment brought a number of the inhabitants, and Pickle himſelf, to his aid. The aſſailants would have perſiſted in their deſign, had the oppoſition been ſuch as they could have faced with any poſſibility of ſucceſs: nor did they quit their prey before a dozen, at leaſt, had come to his reſcue, and Peregrine, with a menacing aſpect and air of authority, commanded his old valet to withdraw: then they thought proper to ſheer off, and betake themſelves to cloſe quarters, while our hero accompanied the affrighted Cadwallader to the gate, and exhibited to the warden a formal complaint againſt the rioters, upon whom he retorted the charge of lunacy, which was ſupported by the evidence of twenty perſons, who had been eye-witneſſes of the outrage committed againſt the old gentleman.

The governor, in conſequence of this information, ſent a meſſage to Mr. Hatchway, warning him to move his lodging next day, on pain of being expelled. The lieutenant contumaciouſly refuſing to comply with this intimation, was in the morning, while he amuſed himſelf in walking upon the *Bare*, ſuddenly ſurrounded by the conſtables of the court, who took him and his adherents priſoners, before they were aware, and delivered them into the hands of the turnkeys, by whom they were immediately diſmiſſed, and their baggage conveyed to the ſide of the ditch.

This expulſion was not performed without an obſtinate oppoſition on the part of the delinquents; who, had they not been ſurprized, would have ſet the whole

Fleet

Fleet at defiance, and in all probability have acted divers tragedies before they could have been overpowered. Things being circumstanced as they were, the lieutenant did not part with his conductor without tweaking his nose by way of farewel; and Pipes, in imitation of such a laudable example, communicated a token of remembrance, in an application to the sole eye of his attendant, who scorning to be outdone in this kind of courtesy, returned the compliment with such good-will, that Tom's organ performed the office of a multiplying glass. These were mutual hints for stripping; and accordingly each was naked from the waist upwards in a trice. A ring of butchers from the market was immediately formed; a couple of the reverend Flamens, who, in morning gowns, ply for marriages in that quarter of the town, constituted themselves seconds and umpires of the approaching contest, and the battle began without farther preparation. The combatants were, in point of strength and agility, pretty equally matched; but the gaoler had been regularly trained to the art of bruising; he had more than once signalized himself in publick, by his prowess and skill in this exercise, and lost one eye upon the stage in the course of his exploits. This was a misfortune of which Pipes did not fail to take the advantage: he had already sustained several hard knocks upon his temples and jaws, and found it impracticable to smite his antagonist upon the victualling-office, so dextrously was it defended against assault. He then changed his battery, and being ambi-dexter, raised such a clatter upon the turnkey's blind-side, that this hero believing him left-handed, converted his attention that way, and opposed the unenlightened side of his face to the right-hand of Pipes, which being thus unprovided against, slily bestowed upon him a peg under the fifth rib, that in an instant laid him senseless on the pavement, at the feet of his conqueror. Pipes was congratulated upon his victory, not only by his friend Hatchway, but also by all the by-standers, particularly the

prieſt who had eſpouſed his cauſe, and now invited the ſtrangers to his lodgings in a neighbouring ale-houſe, where they were entertained ſo much to their liking, that they determined to ſeek no other habitation while they ſhould continue in town: and notwithſtanding the diſgrace and diſcouragement they had met with, in their endeavours to ſerve our adventurer, they were ſtill reſolved to perſevere in their good offices, or, in the vulgar phraſe, to ſee him out.

While they ſettled themſelves in this manner, and acquired familiar connections round all the purlieus of the ditch, Peregrine found himſelf deprived of the company of Cadwallader, who ſignified by letter, that he did not chuſe to hazard his perſon again in viſiting him, while ſuch aſſaſſins occupied the avenues through which he muſt paſs; for he had been at pains to enquire into the motions of the ſeamen, and informed himſelf exactly of the harbour in which they were moored.

Our hero had been ſo much accuſtomed to the converſation of Crabtree, which was altogether ſuitable to the ſingularity of his own diſpoſition, that he could very ill afford to be debarred of it at this juncture when almoſt every other ſource of enjoyment was ſtopped. He was, however, obliged to ſubmit to the hardſhips of his ſituation; and as the characters of his fellow-priſoners did not at all improve upon him, he was compelled to ſeek for ſatisfaction within himſelf. Not but that he had an opportunity of converſing with ſome people, who neither wanted ſenſe, nor were deficient in point of principle; yet there appeared in the behaviour of them all, without exception, a certain want of decorum, a ſqualor of ſentiment, a ſort of gaoliſh caſt contracted in the courſe of confinement which diſguſted the delicacy of our hero's obſervation. He therefore detached himſelf from their parties as much as he could, without giving offence to thoſe among whom he was obliged to live, and reſumed his labours with incredible eagerneſs and perſeverance, his ſpirits

spirits being supported by some severe Philippics, which he occasionally published against the author of his misfortune.

Nor was his humanity unemployed in the vacations of his revenge: a man must be void of all sympathy and compassion, who can reside among so many miserable objects, without feeling an inclination to relieve their distress. Every day almost presented to his view such lamentable scenes, as were most likely to attract his notice, and engage his benevolence. Reverses of fortune, attended with the most deplorable circumstances of domestick woe, were continually intruding upon his acquaintance; his ears were invaded with the cries of the hapless wife, who, from the enjoyment of affluence and pleasure, was forced to follow her husband to this abode of wretchedness and want; his eyes were every minute assailed with the naked and meagre appearance of hunger and cold; and his fancy teemed with a thousand aggravations of their misery.

Thus situated, his purse was never shut while his heart remained open. Without reflecting upon the tenderness of his store, he exercised his charity to all the children of distress, and acquired a popularity, which, though pleasing, was far from being profitable. In short, his bounty kept no pace with his circumstances, and in a little time he was utterly exhausted. He had recourse to his bookseller, from whom, with great difficulty, he obtained a small reinforcement; and immediately relapsed into the same want of retention. He was conscious of his infirmity, and found it incurable: he foresaw that by his own industry he should never be able to defray the expence of these occasions; and this reflection sunk deep into his mind. The approbation of the publick, which he had earned or might acquire, like a cordial often repeated, began to lose its effect upon his imagination: his health suffered by his sedentary life and austere application; his eye-sight failed; his appetite forsook him; his spirits decayed; so that he became melancholy, listless, and altogether

incapable

incapable of proſecuting the only means he had left for his ſubſiſtence; and (what did not at all contribute to the alleviation of theſe particulars) he was given to underſtand by his lawyer, that he had loſt his cauſe, and was condemned in coſts. Even this was not the moſt mortifying piece of intelligence he received; he at the ſame time learned that his bookſeller was bankrupt, and his friend Crabtree at the point of death.

Theſe were comfortable conſiderations to a youth of Peregrine's diſpoſition; which was ſo capricious, that the more his miſery increaſed, the more haughty and inflexible he became. Rather than be beholden to Hatchway, who ſtill hovered about the gate, eager for an opportunity to aſſiſt him, he choſe to undergo the want of almoſt every convenience of life, and actually pledged his wearing apparel to an Iriſh pawnbroker in the Fleet, for money to purchaſe thoſe things without which he muſt have abſolutely periſhed. He was gradually irritated by his misfortunes into a rancorous reſentment againſt mankind in general, and his heart ſo alienated from the enjoyments of life, that he did not care how ſoon he quitted his miſerable exiſtence. Though he had ſhocking examples of the viciſſitudes of fortune continually before his eyes, he could never be reconciled to the idea of living like his fellow-ſufferers, in the moſt abject degree of dependance. If he refuſed to accept of favours from his own allies and intimate friends, whom he had formerly obliged, it is not to be ſuppoſed that he would liſten to propoſals of that kind from any of his fellow priſoners, with whom he had contracted acquaintance: he was even more cautious than ever of incurring obligations; he now ſhunned his former meſsmates, in order to avoid diſagreeable tenders of friendſhip. Imagining that he perceived an inclination in the clergyman to learn the ſtate of his finances, he diſcouraged and declined the explanation, and at length ſecluded himſelf from all ſociety.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

He receives an unexpected Visit; and the Clouds of Misfortune begin to separate.

WHILE he pined in this forlorn condition, with an equal abhorrence of the world and himſelf, Captain Gauntlet arrived in town, in order to employ his intereſt for promotion in the army; and in conſequence of his wife's particular deſire, made it his buſineſs to enquire for Peregrine, to whom he longed to be reconciled, even though at the expence of a ſlight ſubmiſſion. But he could hear no tidings of him at the place to which he was directed; and, on the ſuppoſition that our hero had gone to reſide in the country, applied himſelf to his own buſineſs, with intention to renew his enquiries after that affair ſhould be tranſacted. He communicated his demands to his ſuppoſed patron, who had aſſumed the merit of making him a captain, and been gratified with a valuable preſent on that conſideration; and was cajoled with hopes of ſucceeding in his preſent aim by the ſame intereſt.

Meanwhile he became acquainted with one of the clerks belonging to the war-office, whoſe advice and aſſiſtance, he was told, would be a furtherance to his ſcheme. As he had occaſion to diſcourſe with this gentleman upon the circumſtances of his expectation, he learned that the nobleman, upon whom he depended, was a perſon of no conſequence in the ſtate, and altogether incapable of aſſiſting him in his advancement. At the ſame time, his counſellor expreſſed his ſurprize that Captain Gauntlet did not rather intereſt in his cauſe the noble peer, to whoſe good offices he owed his laſt commiſſion.

This remark introduced an explanation, by which Godfrey diſcovered, to his infinite aſtoniſhment, the miſtake in which he had continued ſo long with regard to his patron; though he could not divine the motive which induced a nobleman, with whom he had no acquaintance or connection, to interpoſe his influence in

his behalf. Whatſoever that might be, he thought it was his duty to make his acknowledgment; and for that purpoſe went next morning to his houſe, where he was politely received, and given to underſtand, that Mr. Pickle was the perſon to whoſe friendſhip he was indebted for his laſt promotion.

Inexpreſſible were the tranſports of gratitude, affection, and remorſe, that took poſſeſſion of the ſoul of Gauntlet when this myſtery was unfolded. "Good Heaven!" cried he, lifting up his hands, "have I lived ſo long in a ſtate of animoſity with my benefactor? I intended to have reconciled myſelf to him, at any rate, before I was ſenſible of this obligation; but now ſhall not enjoy a moment's quiet until I have an opportunity of expreſſing to him my ſenſe of his heroick friendſhip. I preſume, from the nature of the favour conferred upon him in my behalf, that Mr. Pickle is well known to your lordſhip: and I ſhould think myſelf extremely happy, if you could inform me in what part of the country he is to be found: for the perſon with whom he lodged ſome time ago could give me no intelligence of his motion."

The nobleman, touched with this inſtance of generous ſelf-denial in Peregrine, as well as with the ſenſibility of his friend, lamented the unhappineſs of our hero, while he gave Gauntlet to underſtand that he had been long diſordered in his intellects, in conſequence of having ſquandered away his fortune; and that his creditors had thrown him into the Fleet-priſon: but whether he ſtill continued in that confinement, or was releaſed from his misfortunes by death, his lordſhip did not know, becauſe he had never enquired.

Godfrey no ſooner received this intimation, than (his blood boiling with grief and impatience) he craved pardon for his abrupt departure: then quitting his informer on the inſtant, re-embarked in his hackney-coach, and ordered himſelf to be conveyed directly to the Fleet. As the vehicle proceeded along one ſide of the market, he was ſurprized with the appearance of

Hatchway

Hatchway and Pipes, who ſtood cheapening cauliflowers at a green-ſtall, their heads being caſed in worſted night-caps, half covered with their hats, and a ſhort tobacco-pipe in the mouth of each. He was rejoiced at ſight of the two ſeamen, which he took for an happy omen of finding his friend; and ordering the coachman to ſtop the carriage, called to the lieutenant by his name. Jack replied with an *Hilloah!* looked behind him, and recognizing the face of his old acquaintance, ran up to the coach with great eagerneſs. Shaking the captain heartily by the hand, "Odd's heart!" ſaid he, "I am glad thou haſt fallen in with us; we ſhall now be able to find the trim of the veſſel, and lay her about on t'other tack. For my own part, I have had many a conſort in my time, that is, in the way of good fellowſhip, and I always made ſhift to ware 'em at one time or another: but this headſtrong toad will neither obey the helm nor the ſheet; and, for aught I know, will founder where a' lies at anchor."

Gauntlet, who conceived part of his meaning, alighted immediately; and being conducted to the ſailor's lodging, was informed of every thing that had paſſed between the lieutenant and Pickle. He, in his turn, communicated to Jack the diſcovery which he had made with regard to his commiſſion; at which the other gave no ſigns of ſurprize; but taking the pipe from his mouth, "Why, look ye, captain," ſaid he, "that's not the only good turn you have owed him. That ſame money you received from the Commodore as an old debt was all a ſham, contrived by Pickle for your ſervice; but a' would drive under his bare poles, without ſails and rigging, or a meſs of proviſion on board, rather than take the ſame aſſiſtance from another man."

Godfrey was not only amazed, but chagrined at the knowledge of this anecdote; which gave umbrage to his pride, while it ſtimulated his deſire of doing ſomething in return for the obligation. He enquired into the preſent circumſtances of the priſoner; and under-

ſtanding that he was indiſpoſed, and but indifferently provided with the common neceſſaries of life, though ſtill deaf to all offers of aſſiſtance, began to be extremely concerned at the account of his ſavage obſtinacy and pride, which would, he feared, exclude him from the privilege of relieving him in his diſtreſs. However, he reſolved to leave no expedient untried, that might have any tendency to ſurmount ſuch deſtructive prejudice; and, entering the gaol, was directed to the apartment of the wretched priſoner. He knocked ſoftly at the door, and when it was opened, ſtarted back with horror and aſtoniſhment: the figure that preſented itſelf to his view, was the remains of his once happy friend; but ſo miſerably altered and diſguiſed, that his features were ſcarce cognizable. The florid, the ſprightly, the gay, the elevated youth, was now metamorphoſed into a wan, dejected, meagre, ſqualid ſpectre; the hollow-eyed repreſentative of diſtemper, indigence, and deſpair: yet his eyes retained a certain ferocity, which threw a diſmal gleam athwart the cloudineſs of his aſpect; and he, in ſilence, viewed his old companion with a look betokening confuſion and diſdain. As for Gauntlet, he could not, without emotion, behold ſuch a woeful reverſe of fate, in a perſon for whom he entertained the nobleſt ſentiments of friendſhip, gratitude, and eſteem: his ſorrow was at firſt too big for utterance, and he ſhed a flood of tears before he could pronounce one word.

Peregrine, in ſpite of his miſanthropy, could not help being affected with this uncommon teſtimony of regard; but he ſtrove to ſtifle his ſenſations: his brows contracted themſelves into a ſevere frown; his eyes kindled into the appearance of live coals; he waved with his hand, in ſignal for Godfrey to be gone, and leave ſuch a wretch as him to the miſeries of his fate; and finding nature too ſtrong to be ſuppreſſed, uttered a deep groan and wept aloud.

The ſoldier, ſeeing him thus melted, unable to reſtrain the ſtrong impulſe of his affection, ſprung to-

wards, and clasping him in his arms, "My dearest friend, and best benefactor," said he, "I am come hither to humble myself for the offence I was so unhappy as to give you at our last parting; to beg a reconciliation, to thank you for the ease and affluence I have enjoyed through your means, and to rescue you, in spite of yourself, from this melancholy situation, of which but an hour ago I was utterly ignorant. Do not deny me the satisfaction of acquitting myself in point of duty and obligation. You must certainly have had some regard for a person, in whose favour you have exerted yourself so much; and if any part of that esteem remains, you will not refuse him an opportunity of approving himself in some measure worthy of it. Let me not suffer the most mortifying of all repulses, that of slighted friendship; but kindly sacrifice your friendship and inflexibility to the request of one, who is at all times ready to sacrifice his life for your honour and advantage. If you will not yield to my intreaties, have some regard to the wishes of my Sophy, who laid me under the strongest injunctions to solicit your forgiveness, even before she knew how much I was indebted to your generosity; or, if that consideration should be of no weight, I hope you will relax a little for the sake of poor Emilia, whose resentment hath been long subdued by her affection, and who now droops in secret at your neglect."

Every word of this address, delivered in the most pathetic manner, made an impression upon the mind of Peregrine: he was affected with the submission of his friend, who, in reality, had given him no just cause to complain. He knew that no ordinary motive had swayed him to a condescension, so extraordinary in a man of his punctilious temper: he considered it, therefore, as the genuine effect of eager gratitude and disinterested love, and his heart began to relent accordingly. When he heard himself conjured in the name of the gentle Sophy, his obstinacy was quite overcome; and when Emilia was recalled to his remem-

brance, his whole frame underwent a violent agitation. He took his friend by the hand, with a ſoftened look, and as ſoon as he recovered the faculty of ſpeech, which had been overpowered in the conflict of paſſions that tranſported him, proteſted, that he retained no veſtige of animoſity, but conſidered him in the light of an affectionate comrade, the ties of whoſe friendſhip adverſity could not unbind. He mentioned Sophy in the moſt reſpectful terms; ſpoke of Emilia with the moſt reverential awe, as the object of his inviolable love and veneration; but diſclaimed all hope of ever more attracting her regard; and excuſed himſelf from profiting by Godfrey's kind intention; declaring, with a reſolute air, that he had broke off all connection with mankind, and that he impatiently longed for the hour of his diſſolution, which, if it ſhould not ſoon arrive in the courſe of nature, he was reſolved to haſten with his own hands, rather than be expoſed to the contempt, and more intolerable pity, of a raſcally world.

Gauntlet argued againſt this frantic determination with all the vehemence of expoſtulating friendſhip; but his remonſtrances did not produce the deſired effect upon our deſperate hero, who calmy refuted all his arguments, and aſſerted the rectitude of his deſign, from the pretended maxims of reaſon and true philoſophy.

While this diſpute was carried on with eagerneſs on one ſide, and deliberation on the other, a letter was brought to Peregrine, who threw it careleſsly aſide unopened, though the ſuperſcription was in an hand-writing to which he was a ſtranger: and, in all probability, the contents would never have been peruſed, had not Gauntlet inſiſted upon his waving all ceremony, and reading it forthwith. Thus ſolicited, Pickle unſealed the billet, which, to his no ſmall ſurprize, contained the following intimation.

'MR. P. PICKLE,

'SIR,

'THIS comes to inform you, that after many dan-
'gers and diſappointments, I am, by the bleſſing of
'God,

'God, safely arrived in the Downs, on board of the 'Gomberoon Indiaman, having made a tolerable voy- 'age; by which I hope I shall be enabled to repay, 'with interest, the seven hundred pounds which I bor- 'rowed of you before my departure from England. I 'take this opportunity of writing by our purser, who 'goes express with dispatches for the company, that 'you may have this satisfactory notice as soon as pos- 'sible, relating to one whom I suppose you have long 'given over as lost. I have inclosed it in a letter to 'my broker, who, I hope, knows your address, and 'will forward it accordingly: and I am, with respect, 'your most humble servant,

'BENJAMIN CHINTZ.'

He had no sooner taken a cursory view of this agree- able epistle, than his countenance cleared up, and reaching it to his friend, with a smile, "There," said he, "is a more convincing argument on your side of the question, than all the casuists in the universe can advance." Gauntlet, wondering at this observation, took the paper, and casting his eyes greedily upon the contents, congratulated him upon the receipt of it with extravagant demonstrations of joy: "Not on account of the sum," said he, "which, upon my honour, I would with pleasure pay three times over for your con- venience and satisfaction; but because it seems to have reconciled you to life, and disposed your mind for re- enjoying the comforts of society."

The instantaneous effect which this unexpected smile of fortune produced in the appearance of our adventu- rer, is altogether inconceivable: it plumped up his cheeks in a moment, unbended and enlightened every feature of his face; elevated his head, which had be- gun to sink, as it were, between his shoulders; and from a squeaking, dispirited tone, swelled up his voice to a clear, manly accent. Godfrey, taking advantage of this favourable change, began to regale him with prospects of future success: he reminded him of his youth and qualifications, which were certainly designed

for better days than thoſe he had as yet ſeen; he pointed out various paths, by which he might arrive at wealth and reputation; he importuned him to accept of a ſum for his immediate occaſions; and earneſtly begged, that he would allow him to diſcharge the debt for which he was confined; obſerving, that Sophy's fortune had enabled him to exhibit that proof of his gratitude, without any detriment to his affairs; and proteſting that he ſhould not believe himſelf in poſſeſſion of Mr. Pickle's eſteem, unleſs he was permitted to make ſome ſuch return of good-will to the man, who had not only raiſed him from indigence and ſcorn to competence and reputable rank, but alſo impowered him to obtain the poſſeſſion of an excellent woman, who had filled up the meaſure of his felicity.

Peregrine declared himſelf already overpaid for all his good offices by the pleaſure he enjoyed in employing them, and the happy effects they had produced, in the mutual ſatisfaction of two perſons ſo dear to his affection; and aſſured his friend, that one time or other he would ſet his conſcience at eaſe, and remove the ſcruples of his honour, by having recourſe to his aſſiſtance: but, at preſent, he could not make uſe of his friendſhip, without giving juſt cauſe of offence to honeſt Hatchway, who was prior to him in point of ſolicitation, and had manifeſted his attachment with ſurprizing obſtinacy and perſeverance.

CHAP. XVII.

Peregrine reconciles himſelf to the Lieutenant, and renews his Connection with Society. Divers Plans are projected in his Behalf, and he has Occaſion to exhibit a remarkable Proof of Self-Denial.

THE captain, with reluctance, yielded the preference in this particular to Jack, who was immediately invited to a conference, by a note ſubſcribed with Pickle's own hand. He was found at the priſon-gate, waiting for Gauntlet, to know the iſſue of his negociation. He no ſooner received this ſummons, than he

ſet all his ſails, and made the beſt of his way to his friend's apartment; being admitted by the turnkey, in conſequence of Peregrine's requeſt, communicated by the meſſenger who carried the billet. Pipes followed cloſe in the wake of his ſhipmate; and, in a few minutes after the note had been diſpatched, Peregrine and Gauntlet heard the ſound of the ſtump aſcending the wooden ſtair-caſe with ſuch velocity, that they at firſt miſtook it for the application of drum-ſticks to the head of an empty barrel. This uncommon ſpeed, however, was attended with a misfortune; he chanced to overlook a ſmall defect in one of the ſteps, and his prop plunging into a hole, he fell backwards, to the imminent danger of his life. Tom was luckily at his back, and ſuſtained him in his arms, ſo as that he eſcaped without any other damage than the loſs of his wooden leg, which was ſnapped in the middle by the weight of his body in falling; and ſuch was his impatience, that he would not give himſelf the trouble to diſengage the fractured member. Unbuckling the whole equipage in a trice, he left it ſticking in the crevice, ſaying a rotten cable was not worth heaving up; and, in this natural ſtate of mutilation hopped into the room with infinite expedition.

Peregrine taking him cordially by the hand, ſeated him upon one ſide of his bed; and after having made an apology for that reſerve, of which he had ſo juſtly complained, aſked, if he could conveniently accommodate him with the loan of twenty guineas. The lieutenant, without opening his mouth, pulled out his purſe; and Pipes, who overheard the demand, applying the whiſtle to his lips, performed a loud overture in token of his joy. Matters being thus brought to an accommodation, our hero told the captain, that he ſhould be glad of his company at dinner, with their common friend Hatchway, if he would in the mean time leave him to the miniſtry of Pipes; and the ſoldier went away for the preſent, in order to pay a ſhort viſit to his uncle,

uncle, who, at that time, languiſhed in a declining ſtate of health, promiſing to return at the appointed hour.

The lieutenant, having ſurveyed the diſmal appearance of his friend, could not help being moved at the ſpectacle, and began to upbraid him with his obſtinate pride, which he ſwore was no better than ſelf-murder. But the young gentleman interrupted him in the courſe of his moralizing, by telling him he had reaſons for his conduct, which perhaps he ſhould impart in due ſeaſon; but at preſent his deſign was to alter that plan of behaviour, and make himſelf ſome amends for the miſery he had undergone. He accordingly ſent Pipes to redeem his cloaths from the pawnbroker's wardrobe, and beſpeak ſomething comfortable for dinner. When Godfrey came back, he was very agreeably ſurprized to ſee ſuch a favourable alteration in his externals; for, by the aſſiſtance of his valet, he had purified himſelf from the dregs of his diſtreſs, and now appeared in a decent ſuit, with clean linen, while his face was diſencumbered of the hair that overſhadowed it, and his apartment prepared for the reception of company.

They enjoyed their meal with great ſatisfaction, entertaining one another with a recapitulation of their former adventures at the garriſon. In the afternoon, Gautlet taking his leave, in order to write a letter to his ſiſter, at the deſire of his uncle, who finding his end approaching, wanted to ſee her without loſs of time, Peregrine made his appearance on the *Bare*, and was complimented on his coming abroad again, not only by his old meſs-mates, who had not ſeen him for many weeks, but by a number of thoſe objects whom his liberality had fed before his funds were exhauſted. Hatchway was, by his intereſt with the warden, put in poſſeſſion of his former quarters, and Pipes diſpatched to make enquiry about Crabtree at his former lodging, where he learned that the miſanthrope, after a very ſevere fit of illneſs, was removed to Kenſington Gravel-pits, for the convenience of breathing a purer air than that of London.

In

In conſequence of this information, Peregrine, who knew the narrowneſs of the old gentleman's fortune, next day deſired his friend Gauntlet to take the trouble of viſiting him in his name, with a letter, in which he expreſſed great concern for his indiſpoſition, gave him notice of the fortunate intelligence he had received from the Downs, and conjured him to make uſe of his purſe, if he was in the leaſt hampered in his circumſtances. The captain took coach immediately, and ſet out for the place, according to the direction which Pipes had procured.

Cadwallader having ſeen him at Bath, knew him again at firſt ſight; and though reduced to a ſkeleton, believed himſelf in ſuch a fair way of doing well, that he would have accompanied him to the Fleet immediately, had not he been reſtrained by his nurſe, who was, by his phyſician inveſted with full authority to diſpute and oppoſe his will in every thing that ſhe ſhould think prejudicial to his health; for he was conſidered, by thoſe who had the care of him, as an old humouriſt, not a little diſtempered in his brain. He enquired particularly about the ſailors, who (he ſaid) had deterred him from carrying on his uſual correſpondence with Pickle, and been the immediate cauſe of his indiſpoſition, by terrifying him into a fever. Underſtanding that the breach between Pickle and Hatchway was happily cemented, and that he was no longer in any danger from the lieutenant's reſentment, he promiſed to be at the Fleet with the firſt convenient opportunity; and, in the mean time, wrote an anſwer to Peregrine's letter, importing that he was obliged to him for his offer, but had not the leaſt occaſion for his aſſiſtance.

In a few days our adventurer recovered his vigour, complexion, and vivacity; he mingled again in the diverſions and parties of the place; and he received in a little time, the money he had lent upon bottomry, which, together with the intereſt, amounted to upwards of eleven hundred pounds. The poſſeſſion of this ſum, while it buoyed up his ſpirits, involved him in per-

plexity.

plexity. Sometimes he thought it was incumbent upon him, as a man of honour, to employ the greateſt part of it in diminiſhing the debt for which he ſuffered; on the other hand, he conſidered that obligation effaced, by the treacherous behaviour of his creditor who had injured him to ten times the value of the ſum: and in theſe ſentiments, entertained thoughts of attempting his eſcape from priſon, with a view of conveying himſelf, with the ſhipwreck of his fortune, to another country, in which he might uſe it to better advantage.

Both ſuggeſtions were attended with ſuch doubts and difficulties, that he heſitated between them, and for the preſent laid out a thouſand pounds in ſtock, the intereſt of which, together with the fruits of his own induſtry, he hoped, would ſupport him above want in his confinement, until ſomething ſhould occur that would point out the expediency of ſome other determination. Gauntlet ſtill inſiſted upon having the honour of obtaining his liberty, at the expence of taking up his notes to Gleanum, and exhorted him to purchaſe a commiſſion with part of the money which he had retrieved. The lieutenant affirmed, that it was his privilege to procure the releaſe of his couſin Pickle, becauſe he enjoyed a very handſome ſum by his aunt, which of right belonged to the young gentleman, to whom he was moreover indebted for the uſe of his furniture, and for the very houſe that ſtood over his head; and that, although he had already made a will in his favour, he ſhould never be ſatisfied, nor eaſy in his mind, ſo long as he remained deprived of his liberty, and wanted any of the conveniences of life.

Cadwallader, who by this time aſſiſted at their councils, and was beſt acquainted with the peculiarity and unbending diſpoſition of the youth, propoſed, that ſeeing he was ſo averſe to obligations, Mr. Hatchway ſhould purchaſe of him the garriſon with its appendages, which, at a moderate price, would ſell for more money than would be ſufficient to diſcharge his debts; that, if the ſervile ſubordination of the army did not

ſuit

ſuit his inclinations, he might with his reverſion buy a comfortable annuity, and retire with him to the country, where he might live abſolutely independent, and entertain himſelf, as uſual, with the ridiculous characters of mankind.

This plan was to Pickle leſs diſagreeable than any other project which had as yet been ſuggeſted; and the lieutenant declared himſelf ready to execute his part of it without delay; but the ſoldier was mortified at the thoughts of ſeeing his aſſiſtance unneceſſary, and eagerly objected to the retirement, as a ſcheme that would blaſt the faireſt promiſes of fame and fortune, and bury his youth and talents in ſolitude and obſcurity. This earneſt oppoſition on the part of Gauntlet, hindered our adventurer from forming any immediate reſolution; which was alſo retarded by his unwillingneſs to part with the garriſon upon any terms, becauſe he looked upon it as a part of his inheritance, which he could not diſpoſe of without committing an inſult upon the memory of the deceaſed Commodore.

CHAP. XVIII.

He is engaged in a very extrordinary Correſpondence, which is interrupted by a very unexpected Event.

WHILE this affair was in agitation, the captain told him, in the courſe of converſation, that Emilia was arrived in town, and had enquired about Mr. Pickle with ſuch an eagerneſs of concern, as ſeemed to proclaim that ſhe was in ſome meaſure informed of his misfortune: he therefore deſired to know if he might be allowed to make her acquainted with his ſituation, provided he ſhould be again importuned by her on that ſubject, which he had at firſt induſtriouſly waved.

This proof, or rather preſumption, of her ſympathizing regard, did not fail to operate powerfully upon the boſom of Peregrine, which was immediately filled with thoſe tumults which love, ill ſtifled, frequently excites. He obſerved, that his diſgrace was ſuch as could not be effectually concealed; therefore he ſaw no

reaſon

reason for depriving himself of Emilia's compassion, since he was for ever excluded from her affection; and desired Godfrey to present to his sister the lowly respects of a despairing lover.

But, notwithstanding his declaration of despondence on this head, his imagination involuntarily teemed with more agreeable ideas: the proposal of Crabtree had taken root in his reflection, and he could not help forming plans of pastoral felicity, in the arms of the lovely Emilia, remote from those pompous scenes which he now detested and despised. He amused his fancy with the prospect of being able to support her in a state of independency, by means of the slender annuity which it was in his power to purchase, together with the fruits of those endeavours which would profitably employ his vacant hours; and foresaw provision for his growing family in the friendship of the lieutenant, who had already constituted him his heir. He even parcelled out his hours among the necessary cares of the world, the pleasures of domestic bliss, and the enjoyments of a country life; and spent the night in ideal parties with his charming bride, sometimes walking by the sedgy bank of some transparent stream, sometimes pruning the luxuriant vine, and sometimes sitting in social converse with her in a shady grove of his own planting.

These, however, were no more than the shadowy phantoms of imagination, which he well knew would never be realized: not that he believed such happiness unattainable by a person in his circumstances; but because he would not stoop to propose a scheme, which might, in any shape, seem to interfere with the interest of Emilia, or subject himself to a repulse from that young lady, who had rejected his addresses in the zenith of his fortune.

While he diverted himself with these agreeable reveries, an unexpected event intervened, in which she and her brother were deeply interested. The uncle was tapped for the dropsy, and died in a few days after the operation; having bequeathed, in his will, five thou-

sand

ſand pounds to his nephew, and twice that ſum to his niece, who had always enjoyed the greateſt ſhare of his favour.

If our adventurer, before this occurrence, looked upon his love for Emilia as a paſſion which it was neceſſary, at any rate, to conquer or ſuppreſs; he now conſidered her acceſſion of fortune as a circumſtance which confirmed that neceſſity, and reſolved to diſcourage every thought on that ſubject, which ſhould tend to the propagation of hope. One day, in the midſt of a converſation calculated for the purpoſe, Godfrey put into his hand a letter directed to Mr. Pickle, in the hand-writing of Emilia; which the youth no ſooner recognized, than his cheeks were covered with a crimſon dye, and he began to tremble with violent agitation: for he at once gueſſed the import of the billet, which he kiſſed with great reverence and devotion, and was not at all ſuprized when he read the following words.

'SIR,

'I Have performed a ſufficient ſacrifice to my reputation, in retaining hitherto the appearance of that reſentment which I had long ago diſmiſſed; and as the late favourable change in my ſituation impowers me to avow my genuine ſentiments, without fear of cenſure, or ſuſpicion of mercenary deſign, I take this opportunity to aſſure you, that if I ſtill maintain that place in your heart, which I was vain enough to think I once poſſeſſed, I am willing to make the firſt advances to an accommodation; and have actually furniſhed my brother with full powers to conclude it in the name of your appeaſed 'EMILIA.'

Pickle, having kiſſed the ſubſcription with great ardour, fell upon his knees, and lifting up his eyes—"Thank Heaven!" cried he with an air of tranſport, "I have not been miſtaken in my opinion of that generous maid. I believed her inſpired with the moſt dignified and heroic ſentiments, and now ſhe gives me a convincing proof of her magnanimity: it is now my

bufinefs to approve myfelf worthy of her regard. May Heaven inflict upon me the keeneft arrows of its vengeance, if I do not, at this inftant, contemplate the character of Emilia with the moft perfect love and adoration! yet, amiable and enchanting as fhe is, I am, more than ever, determined to facrifice the intereft of my paffion to my glory, though my life fhould fail in the conteft; and even to refufe an offer, which otherwife the whole univerfe fhould not bribe me to forego."

This declaration was not fo unexpected as unwelcome to his friend Gauntlet, who reprefented that his glory was not at all interefted in the affair; becaufe he had already vindicated his generofity, in repeated proffers to lay his whole fortune at Emilia's feet, when it was impoffible that any thing felfifh could enter into the propofal; but that, in rejecting her prefent purpofe, he would give the world an opportunity to fay that his pride was capricious, his obftinacy invincible, and his fifter would have undeniable reafon to believe, that either his paffion for her was diffembled, or the ardour of it confiderably abated.

In anfwer to thefe remonftrances, Pickle obferved, that he had long fet the world at defiance; and as to the opinion of Emilia, he did not doubt that fhe would applaud in her heart the refolution he had taken, and do juftice to the purity of his intentions.

It was not an eafy tafk to divert our hero from his defigns at any time of life; but fince his confinement his inflexibility was become almoft infurmountable. The captain, therefore, after having difcharged his confcience, in affuring him that his fifter's happinefs was at ftake, that his mother had approved of the ftep fhe had taken, and that he himfelf fhould be extremely mortified at his refufal, forbore to prefs him with farther argument, which ferved only to rivet him the more ftrongly in his own opinion; and undertook to deliver this anfwer to Emilia's letter.

'MADAM,

'THAT I revere the dignity of your virtue with

'the

'the utmoſt veneration, and love you infinitely more 'than life, I am at all times ready to demonſtrate; 'but the ſacrifice to honour it is now my turn to pay; 'and ſuch is the rigour of my deſtiny, that, in order 'to juſtify your generoſity, I muſt refuſe to profit by 'your condeſcenſion. Madam, I am doomed to be 'for ever wretched, and to ſigh without ceaſing for 'the poſſeſſion of that jewel, which, though now in 'my offer, I dare not enjoy. I ſhall not pretend to 'expreſs the anguiſh that tears my heart, whilſt I 'communicate this fatal renunciation; but appeal to 'the delicacy of your own ſentiments, which can judge 'of my ſufferings, and will, doubtleſs, do juſtice to the 'ſelf-denial of your forlorn 'P. PICKLE.'

Emilia, who knew the nicety of our hero's pride, had foreſeen the purport of this epiſtle before it came to her hands; ſhe did not therefore deſpair of ſucceſs, nor deſiſt from the proſecution of her plan, which was no other than that of ſecuring her own happineſs, in eſpouſing the man upon whom ſhe had fixed her unalterable affection. Confident of his honour, and fully ſatisfied of the mutual paſſion with which they were inſpired, ſhe gradually decoyed him into a literary correſpondence, wherein ſhe attempted to refute the arguments on which he grounded his refuſal; and, without doubt, the young gentleman was not a little pleaſed with the enjoyment of ſuch delightful commerce, in the courſe of which he had (more than ever) an opportunity of admiring the poignancy of her wit, and the elegance of her underſtanding.

The contemplation of ſuch excellency, while it ſtrengthened the chains with which ſhe held him enſlaved, added emulation to the other motives that induced him to maintain the diſpute; and much ſubtlety of reaſoning was expended upon both ſides of this very particular queſtion, without any proſpect of conviction on either part; till at laſt ſhe began to deſpair of making him a proſelyte to her opinion by dint of argument, and reſolved for the future to apply herſelf chiefly to

the irreſiſtible prepoſſeſſions of his love, which were not at all diminiſhed or impaired by the eſſays of her pen. With this view ſhe propoſed a conference, pretending that it was impoſſible to convey all her reflections upon this ſubject in a ſeries of ſhort letters; and Godfrey undertook to bail him for the day: but, conſcious of her power, he would not truſt himſelf in her preſence, though his heart throbbed with all the eagerneſs of deſire to ſee her fair eyes diſrobed of that reſentment which they had worn ſo long, and to enjoy the raviſhing ſweets of a fond reconciliation.

Nature could not have held out againſt ſuch powerful attacks, had not the pride and caprice of his diſpoſition been gratified to the full in the triumph of his reſiſtance; he looked upon the conteſt as altogether original, and perſevered with obſtinacy, becauſe he thought himſelf ſure of favourable terms, whenever he ſhould be diſpoſed to capitulate. Perhaps he might have over-ſhot himſelf in the courſe of his perſeverance: a young lady of Emilia's fortune and attractions could not fail to find herſelf ſurrounded by temptations which few women can reſiſt. She might have miſinterpreted the meaning of ſome paragraph, or taken umbrage at an unguarded expreſſion in one of Peregrine's letters: ſhe might have been tired out by his obſtinate peculiarity; or at the long run, conſtrued it into madneſs, ſlight, or indifference; or, rather than waſte her prime in fruitleſs endeavours to ſubdue the pride of an headſtrong humouriſt, ſhe might have liſtened to the voice of ſome admirer fraught with qualifications ſufficient to engage her eſteem and affection. But all theſe poſſibilities were providentially prevented by an accident, attended with more important conſequences than any we have hitherto recounted.

Early one morning, Pipes was diſturbed by the arrival of a meſſenger, who had been ſent expreſs from the country by Mr. Clover, with a packet for the lieutenant, and arrived in town over night; but as he was obliged to have recourſe to the information of Jack's

correſpondent in the city, touching the place of his abode, before he demanded entrance at the Fleet, the gate was ſhut; nor would the turnkeys admit him, although he told them he was charged with a meſſage of the utmoſt conſequence; ſo that he was fain to tarry till day break, when he, at his earneſt ſolicitation, was allowed to enter.

Hatchway, opening the packet, found a letter incloſed for Peregrine, with an earneſt requeſt that he ſhould forward it to the hands of that young gentleman with all poſſible diſpatch. Jack, who could not dive into the meaning of this extraordinary injunction, began to imagine that Mrs. Clover lay at the point of death, and wanted to take her laſt farewel of her brother; and this conceit worked ſo ſtrongly upon his imagination, that, while he huddled on his cloaths, and made the beſt of his way to the apartment of our hero, he could not help curſing, within himſelf, the folly of the huſband in ſending ſuch diſagreeable meſſages to a man of Peregrine's impatient temper, already ſoured by his own uneaſy ſituation.

This reflection would have induced him to ſuppreſs the letter, had not he been afraid to tamper with the ticklish diſpoſition of his friend, to whom, while he delivered it, "As for my own part," ſaid he, "mayhap I may have as much natural affection as another; but, when my ſpouſe parted, I bore my misfortune like a Britiſh man and a Chriſtian: for, why? he's no better than a freſh water ſailor, who knows not how to ſtem the current of miſchance."

Pickle being waked from a pleaſant dream, in which the fair Emilia was principally concerned, and hearing this ſtrange preamble, ſat up in his bed, and unſealed the letter in a ſtate of mortification and diſguſt: but what were the emotions of his ſoul, when he read the following intimation!

'DEAR BROTHER,

'IT hath pleaſed God to take your father ſuddenly 'off by a fit of apoplexy; and he has died inteſtate.

 'I give

'I give you this notice, that you may, with all ſpeed, 'come down and take poſſeſſion of your right in deſpite of Maſter Gam and his mother, who, you may 'be ſure, do not ſit eaſy under this unexpected diſpenſation of Providence. I have, by virtue of being 'juſtice of the peace, taken ſuch precautions as I 'thought neceſſary for your advantage; and the funeral ſhall be deferred until your pleaſure be known. 'Your ſiſter, though ſeverely afflicted by her father's 'fate, ſubmits to the will Heaven with laudable reſignation, and begs you will ſet out for this place without delay; in which requeſt ſhe is joined by, Sir, 'your affectionate brother, and humble ſervant,

'CHARLES CLOVER.'

Peregrine, at firſt, looked upon this epiſtle as a mere illuſion of the brain, and a continuation of the reverie in which he had been engaged. He read it ten times over, without being perſuaded that he was actually awake; he rubbed his eyes, and ſhook his head, in order to ſhake off the drowſy vapours that ſurrounded him; he hemm'd thrice with great vociferation, ſnapped his fingers, tweaked his noſe, ſtarted up from his bed, and opening the caſement, took a ſurvey of the well-known objects that appeared on each ſide of his habitation. Every thing ſeemed congruous and connected, and he ſaid, within himſelf, "Sure this is the moſt diſtinct dream that ever ſleep produced." Then he had recourſe again to the paper, which he carefully peruſed, without finding any variation from his firſt notion of the contents.

Hatchway, ſeeing all his extravagancies of action, accompanied with a wild ſtare of diſtraction, began to believe that his head was at length fairly turned, and was really meditating means for ſecuring his perſon; when Pickle, in a tone of ſurprize, exclaimed, "Good God! am I or am I not awake?"—"Why look ye, Couſin Pickle," replied the lieutenant, "that is a queſtion which the deep ſea-line of my underſtanding is not long enough to ſound; but, howſomever, tho'f I

can't

can't truſt to the obſervation I have taken, it ſhall go hard but I will fall upon a way to gueſs whereabouts we are." So ſaying, he lifted up a pitcher full of cold water, that ſtood behind the outward door, and diſcharged it in the face of Peregrine without ceremony or heſitation.

This remedy produced the deſired effect: unpalatable as it was, the young gentleman no ſooner recovered his breath, which was endangered by ſuch a ſudden application, than he thanked his friend Jack for the ſeaſonable operation he had performed. Having no longer any juſt reaſon to doubt the reality of what appeared ſo convincingly to his ſenſes, he ſhifted himſelf on the inſtant, not without hurry and trepidation; and putting on his morning dreſs, ſallied forth to the *Bare*, in order to deliberate with himſelf on the important intelligence he had received.

Hatchway, not yet fully convinced of his ſanity, and curious to know the purport of the letter, which had affected him in ſo extraordinary a manner, carefully attended his footſteps in this excurſion, in hope of being favoured with his confidence in the courſe of their perambulation. Our hero no ſooner appeared at the ſtreet-door, than he was ſaluted by the meſſenger, who having poſted himſelf in the way for that purpoſe, "God bleſs your noble honour, 'Squire Pickle," cried he, "and give you joy of ſucceeding to your father's eſtate!" Theſe words had ſcarce proceeded from his mouth, when the lieutenant, hopping eagerly towards the countryman, ſqueezed his hand with great affection, and aſked if the old gentleman had actually taken his departure. "Aye, Maſter Hatchway," replied the other, "in ſuch a woundy haſte, that he forgot to make a will."—"Body of me!" exclaimed the ſeaman, "theſe are the beſt tidings I have heard ſince I firſt went to ſea. Here, my lad, take my purſe, and ſtow thyſelf chocque full of the beſt liquor in the land." So ſaying, he tipped the peaſant with ten pieces, and immediately the whole place echoed with

the ſound of Tom's inſtrument. Peregrine, repairing to the walk, communicated the billet to his honeſt friend, who at his deſire went forthwith to the lodgings of Captain Gauntlet, and returned in leſs than half an hour with that gentleman, who (I need not ſay) was heartily rejoiced at the occaſion.

CHAP. XIX.

Peregrine holds a Conſultation with his Friends, in Conſequence of which he bids adieu to the Fleet. He arrives at his Father's Houſe, and aſſerts his Right of Inheritance.

NOR did our hero keep the miſanthrope in ignorance of this happy turn of fortune: Pipes was diſpatched to the ſenior with a meſſage, requeſting his immediate preſence; and he accordingly appeared, in obedience to the ſummons, growling with diſcontent, for having been deprived of ſeveral hours of his natural reſt. His mouth was immediately ſtopped with the letter, at which he *ſmiled horrible a ghaſtly grin*; and, after a compliment of congratulation, they entered into cloſe divan, about the meaſures to be taken in conſequence of this event.

There was no room for much debate: it was unanimouſly agreed, that Pickle ſhould ſet out with all poſſible diſpatch for the garriſon, to which Gauntlet and Hatchway reſolved to attend him. Pipes was accordingly ordered to prepare a couple of poſt-chaiſes, while Godfrey went to procure bail for his friend, and provide them with money for the expence of the expedition, but not before he was deſired by Peregrine to conceal this piece of news from his ſiſter, that our youth might have an opportunity to ſurprize her in a more intereſting manner, after he ſhould have ſettled his affairs.

All theſe previous ſteps being taken, in leſs than an hour our hero took his leave of the Fleet, after he had left twenty guineas with the warden for the relief of the poor priſoners, a great number of whom convoyed

him

him to the gate, pouring forth prayers for his long life and profperity; and he took the road to the garrifon, in the moft elevated tranfports of joy, unallayed with the leaft mixture of grief at the death of a parent whofe paternal tendernefs he had never known. His breaft was abfolutely a ftranger to that boafted Στοργὴ, or inftinct of affection, by which the charities are fuppofed to fubfift.

Of all the journies he had ever made, this, fure, was the moft delightful: he felt all the extafy that muft naturally be produced in a young man of his imagination from fuch a fudden tranfition in point of circumftance; he found himfelf delivered from confinement and difgrace, without being obliged to any perfon upon earth for his deliverance; he had it now in his power to retort the contempt of the world in a manner fuited to his moft fanguine wifh; he was reconciled to his friend, and enabled to gratify his love, even upon his own terms; and faw himfelf in poffeffion of a fortune more ample than his firft inheritance, with a ftock of experience that would fteer him clear of all thofe quickfands, among which he had been formerly wrecked.

In the middle of their journey, while they halted at at an inn for a fhort refrefhment and change of horfes, a poftilion running up to Peregrine in the yard, fell at his feet, clafped his knees with great eagernefs and agitation, and prefented to him the individual face of his old valet de chambre. The youth perceiving him in fuch an abject garb and attitude, commanded him to rife and tell the caufe of fuch a miferable reverfe in his fortune. Upon which Hadgi gave him to underftand, that he had been ruined by his wife, who having robbed him of all his cafh and valuable effects, had eloped from his houfe with one of his own cuftomers, who appeared in the character of a French count, but was in reality no other than an Italian fidler; that, in confequence of this retreat, he (the hufband) was difabled from paying a confiderable fum which he had fet apart for his wine-merchant; who being difappointed

in

in his expectation, took out an execution againſt his effects; and the reſt of his creditors following his example, hunted him out of houſe and home: ſo that finding his perſon in danger at London, he had been obliged to eſcape into the country, ſkulking about from one village to another, till being quite deſtitute of all ſupport, he had undertaken his preſent office, to ſave himſelf from ſtarving.

Peregrine liſtened with compaſſion to his lamentable tale, which too well accounted for his not appearing in the Fleet, with offers of ſervice to his maſter in diſtreſs; a circumſtance that Pickle had all along imputed to his avarice and ingratitude. He aſſured him, that as he had been the means of throwing in his way the temptation to which he fell a ſacrifice, he would charge himſelf with the retrieval of his affairs: in the mean time, he made him taſte of his bounty, and deſired him to continue in his preſent employment until he ſhould return from the garriſon, when he would conſider his ſituation, and do ſomething for his immediate relief.

Hadgi attempted to kiſs his ſhoe, and wept, or affected to weep, with ſenſibility at this gracious reception; he even made a merit of his unwillingneſs to exerciſe his new occupation, and earneſtly begged that he might be allowed to give immediate attendance upon his dear maſter, from whom he could not bear the thoughts of a ſecond parting. His intreaties were reinforced by the interceſſion of his two friends, in conſequence of which the Swiſs was permitted to follow them at his own leiſure, while they ſet forwards after a ſlight repaſt, and reached the place of their deſtination before ten o'clock at night.

Peregrine, inſtead of alighting at the garriſon, rode ſtraightway to his father's houſe: and no perſon appearing to receive him, not even a ſervant to take care of his chaiſe, he diſmounted without aſſiſtance. Being followed by his two friends, he advanced into the hall, where perceiving a bell-rope, he made immediate application to it in ſuch a manner as brought a couple of footmen

footmen into his presence. After having reprimanded them with a stern look, for their neglect in point of attendance, he commanded them to shew him into an apartment; and as they seemed unwilling to yield obedience to his orders, asked if they did not belong to the family.

One of them, who took upon himself the office of spokesman, replied with a sullen air, that they had been in the service of old Mr. Pickle, and now that he was dead, thought themselves bound to obey nobody but their lady, and her son Mr. Gamaliel. This declaration had scarce proceeded from his mouth, when our hero gave them to understand, that since they were not disposed to own any other master, they must change their quarters immediately. He ordered them to decamp without farther preparation; and as they still continued restive, they were kicked out of doors by the captain and his friend Hatchway. Squire Gam, who overheard every thing that passed, and was now more than ever inflamed with that rancour which he had sucked with his mother's milk, flew to the assistance of his adherents, with a pistol in each hand, bellowing, 'Thieves! thieves!' with great vociferation, as if he had mistaken the business of the strangers, and actually believed himself in danger of being robbed. Under this pretence he discharged a piece at his brother, who luckily escaped the shot, closed with him in a moment, and wresting the other pistol from his gripe, turned him out into the court-yard, to the consolation of his two dependents.

By this time, Pipes and the two postilions had taken possession of the stables, without being opposed by the coachman and his deputy, who quiely submitted to the authority of their new sovereign: but the noise of the pistol had alarmed Mrs. Pickle, who running down stairs with the most frantic appearance, attended by two maids and the curate, who still maintained his place of chaplain and ghostly director in the family, would have assaulted our hero with her nails had she

not

not been reſtrained by her attendants. Though they prevented her from uſing her hands, they could not hinder her from exerciſing her tongue, which ſhe wagged againſt him with all her virulence of malice. She aſked, if he was come to butcher his brother, to inſult his father's corpſe, and triumph in her affliction; ſhe beſtowed upon him the epithets of ſpendthrift, gaol-bird, and unnatural ruffian: ſhe begged pardon of God for having brought ſuch a monſter into the world; accuſed him of having brought his father's grey hairs with ſorrow to the grave; and affirmed, that were he to touch the body, it would bleed at his approach.

Without pretending to refute the articles of this ridiculous charge, he allowed her to ring out her alarm; and then calmly replied, that if ſhe did not quietly retire to her chamber, and behave as became a perſon in her preſent ſituation, he ſhould inſiſt upon her removing to another lodging without delay; for he was determined to be maſter in his own family. The lady, who in all probability expected that he would endeavour to appeaſe her with all the tenderneſs of filial ſubmiſſion, was ſo much exaſperated at his cavalier behaviour, that her conſtitution could not ſupport the tranſports of her ſpirits; and ſhe was carried off by her women in a fit, while the officious clergyman was diſmiſſed after his pupil, with all the circumſtances of diſgrace.

Our hero having thus made his quarters good, took poſſeſſion of the beſt apartment in the houſe, and ſent notice of his arrival to Mr. Clover; who, with his wife, viſited him in leſs than an hour, and was not a little ſurprized to find him ſo ſuddenly ſettled in his father's houſe. The meeting of Julia and her brother was extremely pathetic. She had always loved him with uncommon tenderneſs, and looked upon him as the ornament of her family; but ſhe had heard of his extravagancies with regret; and though ſhe conſidered the ſtories that were circulated at his expence, as the malicious exaggerations of his mother and her darling

for her apprehension had been grievously alarmed by an account of his imprisonment and distress, which had been accidentally conveyed to that country by a gentleman from London, who had been formerly of his acquaintance; she could not, therefore, without the most tender emotions of joy, see him, as it were, restored to his rightful inheritance, and re-established in that station of life which she thought he could fill with dignity and importance.

After their mutual expressions of affection, she retired to her mother's chamber, with a view to make a second offer of her service and attendance, which had been already rejected with scorn since her father's death; while Peregrine consulted his brother-in-law about the affairs of the family; so far as they had fallen within his cognizance and observation.

Mr. Clover told him, that though he was never favoured with the confidence of the defunct, he knew some of his intimates, who had been tampered with by Mrs. Pickle, and even engaged to second the remonstrances by which she had often endeavoured to persuade her husband to settle his affairs by a formal will; but that he had from time to time evaded their importunities with surprizing excuses of procrastination, that plainly appeared to be the result of invention and design far above the supposed pitch of his capacity: a circumstance from which Mr. Clover concluded, that the old gentleman imagined his life would not have been secure, had he once taken such a step as would have rendered it unnecessary to the independence of his second son. He moreover observed, that in consequence of this information, he no sooner heard of Mr. Pickle's death, which happened at the club, than he went directly with a lawyer to his house, before any cabal or conspiracy could be formed against the rightful heir; and, in presence of witnesses provided for the purpose, sealed up all the papers of the deceased, after the widow had, in the first transports of her sorrow and vexation,

vexation, fairly owned that her husband had died intestate.

Peregrine was extremely well satisfied with this intelligence, by which all his doubts were dispelled; and having chearfully supped with his friends on a cold collation which his brother-in law had brought in his chariot, they retired to rest, in different chambers, after Julia had met with another repulse from her capricious mother, whose overflowing rage had now subsided into the former channel of calm inveteracy.

Next morning the house was supplied with some servants from the garrison, and preparations were made for the funeral of the deceased. Gam having taken lodgings in the neighbourhood, came with a chaise and cart to demand his mother, together with his own cloaths, and her personal effects.

Our hero, though he would not suffer him to enter the door, allowed his proposal to be communicated to the widow, who eagerly embraced the opportunity of removing; and was, with her own baggage, and that of her beloved son, conveyed to the place which he had prepared for her reception. Thither she was followed by her woman, who was desired by Peregrine to assure her mistress, that, until a regular provision could be settled upon her, she might command him in point of money, or any other accommodation in his power.

CHAP. XX.

He performs the last Offices to his Father, and returns to London upon a very interesting Design.

SUITS of mourning being provided for himself, his friends, and adherents, and every other previous measure taken suitable to the occasion, his father was interred in a private manner in the parish church; and his papers being examined, in presence of many persons of honour and integrity invited for that purpose, no will was found, or any other deed, in favour of the second son, though it appeared by the marriage-settlement, that the widow was intitled to a jointure of five hundred

hundred pounds a year. The reſt of his papers conſiſted of Eaſt India bonds, South Sea annuities, mortgages, notes, and aſſignments, to the amount of fourſcore thouſand ſeven hundred and ſixty pounds, excluſive of the houſe, plate and furniture, horſes, equipage and cattle, with the garden and park adjacent, to a very conſiderable extent.

This was a ſum that even exceeded his expectation, and could not fail to entertain his fancy with the moſt agreeable ideas. He found himſelf immediately a man of vaſt conſequence among his country neighbours, who viſited him with compliments of congratulation, and treated him with ſuch reſpect as would have effectually ſpoiled any young man of his diſpoſition, who had not the ſame advantages of experience as he had already purchaſed at a very extravagant price. Thus ſhielded with caution, he bore his proſperity with ſurprizing temperance; every body was charmed with his affability and moderation. When he made a circuit round the gentlemen of the diſtrict, in order to repay the courteſy which he owed, he was careſſed by them with uncommon aſſiduity, and adviſed to offer himſelf as a candidate for the county at the next election, which they ſuppoſed would ſoon happen, becauſe the preſent member was in a declining ſtate of health. Nor did his perſon and addreſs eſcape unheeded by the ladies, many of whom did not ſcruple to ſpread their attractions before him, with a view of captivating ſuch a valuable prize: nay, ſuch an impreſſion did this legacy make upon a certain peer, who reſided in this part of the country, that he cultivated Pickle's acquaintance with great eagerneſs; and, without circumlocution, offered to him in marriage his only daughter, with a very conſiderable fortune.

Our hero expreſſed himſelf upon this occaſion as became a man of honour, ſenſibility, and politeneſs; and frankly gave his lordſhip to underſtand, that his heart was already engaged. He was pleaſed with the opportunity of making ſuch a ſacrifice to his paſſion for

Emilia, which, by this time, inflamed his thoughts to ſuch a degree of impatience, that he reſolved to depart for London with all poſſible ſpeed; and for that purpoſe induſtriouſly employed almoſt every hour of his time in regulating his domeſtic affairs. He paid off all his father's ſervants, and hired others, at the recommendation of his ſiſter, who promiſed to ſuperintend his houſhold in his abſence: he advanced the firſt half-yearly payment of his mother's jointure; and as for his brother Gam, he gave him divers opportunities of acknowledging his faults, ſo as that he might have anſwered to his own conſcience for taking any ſtep in his favour; but that young gentleman was not yet ſufficiently humbled by misfortune, and not only forbore to make any overtures of peace, but alſo took all occaſions to ſlander the conduct and revile the perſon of our hero, being in this practice comforted and abetted by his righteous mamma.

Every thing being thus ſettled for the preſent, the triumvirate ſet out on their return to town in the ſame manner with that in which they had arrived in the country, except in this ſmall variation, that Hatchway's chaiſe companion was now the valet de chambre refitted, inſtead of Pipes, who, with another lacquey, attended them on horſeback. When they had performed two-thirds of their way to London, they chanced to overtake a country ſquire, on his return from a viſit to one of his neighbours, who had entertained him with ſuch hoſpitality, that (as the lieutenant obſerved) he rolled himſelf almoſt gunwale to at every motion of his horſe, which was a fine hunter: and when the chaiſes paſſed him at full ſpeed he ſet up the ſportſman's halloa, in a voice that ſounded like a French-horn, clapping ſpurs to Sorrel at the ſame time, in order to keep up with the pace of the machine.

Peregrine, who was animated with an uncommon flow of ſpirits, ordered his poſtilion to proceed more ſoftly; and entered into converſation with the ſtranger, touching the make and mettle of his horſe, upon which he

he deſcanted with ſo much learning, that the ſquire was aſtoniſhed at his knowledge. When they approached his habitation, he *invited* the young gentleman and his company to halt, and drink a bottle of his ale; and was ſo preſſing in his ſolicitation, that they complied with his requeſt. He accordingly conducted them through a ſpacious avenue, that extended as far as the highway, to the gate of a large *chateau*, of a moſt noble and venerable appearance, which induced them to alight and view the apartments, contrary to their firſt intention of drinking a glaſs of his October at the door.

The rooms were every way ſuitable to the magnificence of the outſide, and our hero imagined they had made a tour through the whole ſweep, when the landlord gave him to underſtand, that they had not yet ſeen the beſt apartment of the houſe, and immediately led them into a ſpacious dining-room, which Peregrine did not enter without giving manifeſt ſigns of uncommon aſtoniſhment. The pannels all round were covered with portraits, all at length, by Vandyke; and not one of them appeared without a ridiculous tye-periwig, in the ſtyle of thoſe that uſually hang over the ſhops of two-penny barbers. The ſtrait boots in which the figures had been originally painted, and the other circumſtances of attitude and foppery, ſo inconſiſtent with this monſtrous furniture of the head, exhibited ſuch a ludicrous appearance, that Pickle's wonder, in a little time, gave way to his mirth, and he was ſeized with a violent fit of laughter which had well nigh deprived him of his breath.

The ſquire, half pleaſed and half offended at this expreſſion of ridicule, 'I know,' ſaid he, 'what makes you laugh ſo woefully: you think it ſtrange to zee my vorefathers booted and ſpurred, with huge three-tailed periwigs on their pates. The truth of the matter is this: I could not abide to zee the pictures of my vamily with a parcel of looſe hair hanging about their eyes, like zo many colts; and zo I employed a painter

yellow from London to clap decent periwigs upon their ſkulls, at the rate of vive ſhillings a head, and offered him three ſhillings a-piece to furniſh each with an handſome pair of ſhoes and ſtockings: but the raſcal, thinking I muſt have 'em done at any price after their heads were covered, haggled with me for vour ſhillings a picture; and zo rather than be impoſed upon, I turned him off, and ſhall let 'em ſtand as they are, till zome more reaſonable brother of the bruſh comes round the country.'

Pickle commended his reſolution, though in his heart he bleſſed himſelf from ſuch a barbarous Goth; and, after they had diſpatched two or three bottles of his beer, they proceeded on their journey, and arrived in town about eleven at night.

CHAP. XXI.

He enjoys an Interview with Emelia, and makes himſelf ample amends for all the Mortifications of his Life.

GODFREY, who had taken leave of his ſiſter, on pretence of making a ſhort excurſion with Peregrine, whoſe health required the enjoyment of freſh air after his long confinement, ſent a meſſage to her that ſame night, announcing his arrival, and giving her notice that he would breakfaſt with her next morning; when he and our hero, who had dreſſed himſelf for the purpoſe, taking a hackney-coach, repaired to her lodging, and were introduced into a parlour adjoining to that in which the tea-table was ſet. Here they had not waited many minutes, when they heard the ſound of feet coming down ſtairs; upon which our hero's heart began to beat the alarm. He concealed himſelf behind the ſcreen, by the direction of his friend, whoſe ears being ſaluted with Sophy's voice from the next room, he flew into it with great ardour, and enjoyed upon her lips the ſweet tranſports of a meeting ſo unexpected; for he had left her in her father's houſe at Windſor.

Amidſt theſe emotions, he had almoſt forgot the ſitu-

ation of Peregrine; when Emilia, aſſuming an inchanting air, "Is not this," ſaid ſhe, "a moſt provoking ſcene to a young woman like me, who am doomed to wear the willow by the ſtrange caprice of my lover? Upon my word, brother, you have done me infinite prejudice, in promoting this jaunt with my obſtinate correſpondent; who, I ſuppoſe, is ſo raviſhed with his tranſient glimpſe of liberty, that he will never be perſuaded to incur unneceſſary confinement for the future."—"My dear ſiſter," replied the captain, tauntingly, "your own pride ſet him the example, ſo you muſt e'en ſtand to the conſequence of his imitation."—"It is a hard caſe, however," anſwered the fair offender, "that I ſhould ſuffer all my life, by one venial treſpaſs. Heigh-ho! who would imagine that a ſprightly girl, ſuch as I, with ten thouſand pounds, ſhould go a begging? I have a good mind to marry the next perſon that aſks me the queſtion, in order to be revenged upon this unyielding humouriſt. Did the dear fellow diſcover no inclination to ſee me in all the term of his releaſement? Well, if ever I can catch the fugitive again, he ſhall ſing in his cage for life."

It is impoſſible to convey to the reader a juſt idea of Peregrine's tranſports, while he overheard this declaration; which was no ſooner pronounced, than, unable to reſiſt the impetuoſity of his paſſion, he ſprung from his lurking place, exclaiming—"Here I ſurrender!" and ruſhing into her preſence, was ſo dazzled with her beauty, that his ſpeech failed; he was fixed, like a ſtatue, to the floor, and all his faculties were abſorpt in admiration. Indeed, ſhe was now in the full bloom of her charms, and it was nearly impoſſible to look upon her without emotion. What then muſt have been the extaſy of our youth, whoſe paſſion was whetted with all the incitements which could ſtimulate the human heart! The ladies ſcreamed with ſurprize at his appearance, and Emilia underwent ſuch agitation as fluſhed every charm with irreſiſtible energy: her cheeks glowed with a moſt delicate ſuffuſion, and her boſom

heaved

heaved with ſuch bewitching undulation, that the cambric could not conceal or contain the ſnowy hemiſpheres that roſe like a viſion of paradiſe to his view.

While he was almoſt fainting with unutterable delight, ſhe ſeemed ready to ſink under the tumults of tenderneſs and confuſion; when our hero, perceiving her condition, obeyed the impulſe of his love, and circled the charmer in his arms, without ſuffering the leaſt frown or ſymptom of diſpleaſure. Not all the pleaſures of his life had amounted to the ineffable joy of this embrace, in which he continued for ſome minutes totally entranced. He faſtened upon her pouting lips with all the eagerneſs of rapture; and, while his brain ſeemed to whirl round with tranſport, exclaimed in a delirium of bliſs, 'Heaven and earth! this is too much to bear.'

His imagination was accordingly relieved, and his attention in ſome meaſure divided, by the interpoſition of Sophy, who kindly chid him for his having overlooked his old friends: thus accoſted, he quitted his delicious armful, and ſaluting Mrs. Gauntlet, aſked pardon for his neglect; obſerving that ſuch rudeneſs was excuſable, conſidering the long and unhappy exile which he had ſuffered from the jewel of his ſoul. Then turning to Emilia, "I am come, Madam," ſaid he, "to claim the performance of your promiſe, which I can produce under your own fair hand: you may, therefore, lay aſide all ſuperfluous ceremony and ſhyneſs, and crown my happineſs without farther delay; for, upon my ſoul! my thoughts are wound up to the laſt pitch of expectation, and I ſhall certainly run diſtracted if I am doomed to any term of probation."

His miſtreſs having by this time recollected herſelf, replied with a moſt exhilarating ſmile, "I ought to puniſh you for your obſtinacy with the mortification of a twelvemonth's trial; but 'tis dangerous to tamper with an admirer of your diſpoſition; and therefore I think I muſt make ſure of you while it is in my power."—"You are willing, then, to take me for better

for worse in presence of Heaven and these witnesses?" cried Peregrine kneeling, and applying her hand to his lips. At this interrogation, her features softened into an amazing expression of condescending love: and whilst she darted a side-glance that thrilled to his marrow, and heaved a sigh more soft than Zephyr's balmy wing, her answer was, "Why—aye—and Heaven grant me patience to bear the humours of such a yoke-fellow."—"And may the same powers," replied the youth, "grant me life and opportunity to manifest the immutability of my love! Meanwhile, I have eighty thousand pounds, which shall be laid immediately in your lap."

So saying, he sealed the contract upon her lips, and explained the mystery of his last words, which had begun to operate upon the wonder of the two sisters. Sophy was agreeably surprized with the account of his good fortune; nor was it, in all probability, unacceptable to the lovely Emilia; though, from this information, she took an opportunity to upbraid her admirer with the inflexibility of his pride, which (she scrupled not to say) would have baffled all the suggestions of his passion, had not it been gratified by this providential event.

Matters being thus happily matured, the lover begged that immediate recourse might be had to the church, and his happiness ascertained before night. But the bride objected, with great vehemence, to such precipitation, being desirous of her mother's presence at the ceremony; and she was seconded in her opinion by her brother's wife. Peregrine, maddening with desire, assaulted her with the most earnest intreaties, representing, that as her mother's consent was already obtained, there was surely no necessity for a delay, that must infallibly make a dangerous impression upon his brain and constitution. He fell at her feet in all the agony of impatience; swore that his life and intellects would actually be in jeopardy by her refusal; and when she attempted to argue him out of his demand,

began

began to rave with ſuch extravagance, that Sophy was frightened into conviction: and Godfrey enforcing the remonſtrances of his friend, the amiable Emilia was teazed into compliance.

After breakfaſt the bridegroom and his companion ſet out for the Commons for a licence, having firſt agreed upon the houſe at which the ceremony ſhould be performed, in the lodgings of the bride: and the permiſſion being obtained, they found means to engage a clergyman, who undertook to attend them at their own time and place. Then a ring was purchaſed for the occaſion; and they went in ſearch of the lieutenant, with whom they dined at a tavern, and not only made him acquainted with the ſteps they had taken, but deſired that he would ſtand father to the bride: an employment which Jack accepted with demonſtrations of particular ſatisfaction; till chancing to look into the ſtreet, and ſeeing Cadwallader approach the door, in conſequence of a meſſage they had ſent to him by Pipes, he declined the office in favour of the ſenior; who was accordingly ordained for that purpoſe, on the ſuppoſition that ſuch a mark of regard might facilitate his concurrence with a match, which otherwiſe he would certainly oppoſe, as he was a profeſſed enemy to wedlock, and as yet ignorant of Peregrine's intention.

After having congratulated Pickle upon his ſucceſſion, and ſhook his two friends by the hand, the miſanthrope aſked whoſe mare was dead, that he was ſummoned in ſuch a plaguy hurry from his dinner, which he had been fain to gobble up like a cannibal. Our hero gave him to underſtand, that they had made an appointment to drink tea with two agreeable ladies, and were unwilling that he ſhould loſe the opportunity of enjoying an entertainment which he loved ſo much. Crabtree, ſhrivelling up his face like an autumn leaf at this intimation, curſed his complaiſance, and ſwore they ſhould keep their aſſignation without him, for he and letchery had ſhook hands many years ago.

The bridegroom, however, likening him unto an old coachman

coachman who still delights in the smack of the whip, and dropping some flattering hints of his manhood even at these years, he was gradually prevailed upon to accompany them to the place of rendezvous; where, being ushered into a dining-room, they had not waited three minutes, when they were joined by the parson, who had observed the hour with great punctuality.

This gentleman no sooner entered the room, than Cadwallader, in a whisper to Gauntlet, asked if that was not the cock bawd; and before the captain could make any reply, "What an unconscionable whoremaster the rogue is!" said he; "scarce discharged from confinement, and sweetened with a little fresh air, when he wenches with a pimp in canonicals in his pay." The door again opened, and Emilia broke in upon them with such dignity of mien, and divinity of aspect, as inspired every spectator with astonishment and admiration. The lieutenant, who had not seen her since her charms were ripened into such perfection, expressed his wonder and approbation in an exclamation of, "Add's zooks! what a glorious galley!" and the misanthrope's visage was instantly metamorphosed into the face of a mountain goat. He licked his lips instinctively, snuffed the air, and squinted with a most horrible obliquity of vision.

The bride and her sister being seated, and Hatchway having renewed his acquaintance with the former, who recognized him with particular civility, Peregrine withdrew into another apartment with his friend Crabtree, to whom he imparted the design of this meeting; which the latter no sooner understood, than he attempted to retreat without partaking any other reply than that of, "Pshaw! rot your matrimony! can't you put your neck in the noose without my being a witness of your folly?"

The young gentleman, in order to vanquish this aversion, stepped to the door of the next room, and begged the favour of speaking with Emilia, to whom he introduced the testy old batchelor, as one of his

particular friends, who desired to have the honour of giving her away. The bewitching smile with which she received his salute, and granted his request, at once overcame the disapprobation of the misanthrope, who with a relaxation in his countenance, which had never been perceived before that instant, thanked her in the most polite terms, for such an agreeable mark of distinction. He accordingly led her into the dining-room, where the ceremony was performed without delay; and after the husband had asserted his prerogative on her lips, the whole company saluted her by the name of Mrs. Pickle.

I shall leave the sensible reader to judge what passed at this juncture, within the bosoms of the new-married couple: Peregrine's heart was fired with inexpressible ardour and impatience; while the transports of the bride were mingled with a dash of diffidence and apprehension. Gauntlet saw it would be too much for both, to bear their present tantalizing situation till night, without some amusement to divert their thoughts; and therefore proposed to pass part of the evening at the publick entertainments at Marybone Gardens, which were at that time frequented by the best company in town. The scheme was relished by the discreet Sophy, who saw the meaning of the proposal, and the bride submitted to the persuasion of her sister; so that, after tea, two coaches were called, and Peregrine was forcibly separated from his charmer during the conveyance.

The new-married couple and their company having made shift to spend the evening, and supped on a slight collation in one of the boxes, Peregrine's patience was almost quite exhausted; and taking Godfrey aside, he imparted his intention to withdraw in private from the sea-wit of his friend Hatchway, who would otherwise retard his bliss with unseasonable impediments, which, at present, he could not possibly bear. Gauntlet, who sympathized with his impatience, undertook to intoxicate the lieutenant with bumpers to the joy of the bride, and in the mean time desired Sophy to retire

with

with his ſiſter, under the auſpices of Cadwallader, who promiſed to ſquire them home.

The ladies were accordingly conducted to the coach; and Jack propoſed to the captain, that for the ſake of the joke, the bridegroom ſhould be plied with liquor in ſuch a manner as would effectually diſable him from enjoying the fruits of his good fortune for one night at leaſt. Gauntlet ſeemed to reliſh the ſcheme, and they prevailed upon Pickle to accompany them to a certain tavern on pretence of drinking a farewel glaſs to a ſingle life; there the bottle was circulated, till Hatchway's brain began to ſuffer innovation. As he had ſecured our hero's hat and ſword, he felt no apprehenſion of an elopement, which however was effected; and the youth haſtened on the wings of love to the arms of his enchanting bride. He found Crabtree in a parlour, waiting for his return, and diſpoſed to entertain him with a lecture upon temperance; to which he paid very little attention, but ringing for Emilia's maid, deſired to know if her miſtreſs was abed. Being anſwered in the affirmative, he ſent her up ſtairs to announce his arrival, undreſſed himſelf to a looſe gown and ſlippers, and wiſhing the miſanthrope good night, after having deſired to ſee him the next day, followed in perſon to the delicious ſcene, where he found her elegantly diſhed out, the faireſt daughter of chaſtity and love.

When he approached, ſhe was overwhelmed with confuſion, and hid her lovely face from his tranſporting view. Mrs. Gauntlet, ſeeing his eyes kindled at the occaſion, kiſſed her charming ſiſter; who, throwing her ſnowy arms about her neck, would have detained her in the room, had not Peregrine gently diſengaged her confidante from her embrace, and conducted her trembling to the door; which having bolted and barricadoed, he profited by his good fortune, and his felicity was perfect.

Next day he roſe about noon, and found his three friends aſſembled, when he learned that Jack had fallen

in his own ſnare, and been obliged to lie in the ſame tavern where he fell: a circumſtance of which he was ſo much aſhamed, that Peregrine and his wife eſcaped many jokes, which he would have certainly cracked, had he not lain under the imputation of this diſgrace. In half an hour after he came down, Mrs. Pickle appeared with Sophy, bluſhing like Aurora or the goddeſs of health, and ſending forth emanations of beauty unparalleled, ſhe was complimented upon her change of ſituation by all preſent, and by none more warmly than by old Crabtree, who declared himſelf ſo well ſatisfied with his friend's fortune, as to be almoſt reconciled to that inſtitution, againſt which he had declaimed during the beſt part of his life.

An expreſs was immediately diſpatched to Mrs. Gauntlet, with an account of her daughter's marriage; a town houſe was hired, and a handſome equipage ſet up, in which the new married pair appeared at all public places, to the aſtoniſhment of our adventurer's fair-weather friends, and the admiration of all the world: for in point of figure, ſuch another couple was not to be found in the whole united kingdom. Envy deſpaired, and Detraction was ſtruck dumb, when our hero's new acceſſion of fortune was conſigned to the celebration of public fame: Emilia attracted the notice of all obſervers, from the pert Templar to the ſovereign himſelf, who was pleaſed to beſtow encomiums upon the excellence of her beauty. Many perſons of conſequence, who had dropped the acquaintance of Peregrine in the beginning of his decline, now made open efforts to cultivate his friendſhip anew: but he diſcouraged all theſe advances with the moſt mortifying diſdain; and one day, when the nobleman whom he had formerly obliged came up to him in the drawing-room, with the ſalutation of, "Your ſervant, Mr. Pickle!" he eyed him with a look of ineffable contempt; ſaying, "I ſuppoſe your lordſhip is miſtaken in your man!" and turned his head another way, in preſence of the whole court.

When

When he had made a circuit round all the places frequented by the beau-monde, to the utter confuſion of thoſe againſt whom his reſentment was kindled, paid off his debts, and ſettled his money matters in town, Hatchway was diſmiſſed to the country, in order to prepare for the reception of his fair Emilia. In a few days after his departure, the whole company (Cadwallader himſelf included) ſet out for his father's houſe, and in their way took up Mrs. Gauntlet the mother, who was ſincerely rejoiced to ſee our hero in the capacity of her ſon-in-law. From her habitation they proceeded homewards at an eaſy pace; and, amidſt the acclamations of the whole pariſh, entered their own houſe, where Emilia was received in the moſt tender manner by Mr. Clover's wife, who had provided every thing for her eaſe and accommodation, and next day ſurrendered unto her the management of her own houſhold affairs.

F I N I S.

THE TANJORE ... 'S SARASWATI MAHAL